

ON GENERALIZED INTEGRAL INEQUALITIES WITH APPLICATIONS IN  
BIO-MATHEMATICS AND PHYSICAL SCIENCES

A THESIS SUBMITTED TO  
THE GRADUATE SCHOOL OF NATURAL AND APPLIED SCIENCES  
OF  
MIDDLE EAST TECHNICAL UNIVERSITY

BY

NESLIHAN NESLIYE PELEN

IN PARTIAL FULFILLMENT OF THE REQUIREMENTS  
FOR  
THE DEGREE OF DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY  
IN  
MATHEMATICS

JANUARY 2015



Approval of the thesis:

**ON GENERALIZED INTEGRAL INEQUALITIES WITH APPLICATIONS IN  
BIO-MATHEMATICS AND PHYSICAL SCIENCES**

submitted by **NESLIHAN NESLIYE PELEN** in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of **Doctor of Philosophy in Mathematics Department, Middle East Technical University** by,

Prof. Dr. Gülbin Dural Ünver  
Dean, Graduate School of **Natural and Applied Sciences**

\_\_\_\_\_

Prof. Dr. Mustafa Korkmaz  
Head of Department, **Mathematics**

\_\_\_\_\_

Prof. Dr. Mustafa Hurşit Önsiper  
Supervisor, **Mathematics Department, METU**

\_\_\_\_\_

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Ayşe Feza Güvenilir  
Co-supervisor, **Mathematics Department, Ankara University**

\_\_\_\_\_

**Examining Committee Members:**

Prof. Dr. Billur Kaymakçalan  
Mathematics Department, Çankaya University

\_\_\_\_\_

Prof. Dr. Mustafa Hurşit Önsiper  
Mathematics Department, METU

\_\_\_\_\_

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Canan Bozkaya  
Mathematics Department, METU

\_\_\_\_\_

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Elvan Akın  
Department of Mathematics and Statistics, Missouri U. S. and T.

\_\_\_\_\_

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Fatma Karakoç  
Mathematics Department, Ankara University

\_\_\_\_\_

**Date:**

\_\_\_\_\_

**I hereby declare that all information in this document has been obtained and presented in accordance with academic rules and ethical conduct. I also declare that, as required by these rules and conduct, I have fully cited and referenced all material and results that are not original to this work.**

Name, Last Name: NESLIHAN NESLIYE PELEN

Signature :

# ABSTRACT

## ON GENERALIZED INTEGRAL INEQUALITIES WITH APPLICATIONS IN BIO-MATHEMATICS AND PHYSICAL SCIENCES

Pelen, Neslihan Nesliye

Ph.D., Department of Mathematics

Supervisor : Prof. Dr. Mustafa Hurşit Önsiper

Co-Supervisor : Assoc. Prof. Dr. Ayşe Feza Güvenilir

January 2015, 97 pages

In this thesis, applications of generalized integral inequalities especially on biomathematics and physics are studied. Application on Biomathematics is about the predator-prey dynamic systems with Beddington DeAngelis type functional response and application on physics is about water percolation equation.

This thesis consists 6 chapters. Chapter 1 is introductory and contains the thesis structure. Chapter 2 is about under which conditions the two dimensional predator-prey dynamic system with Beddington DeAngelis type functional response is permanent and globally attractive. Chapter 3 is about the same type dynamic system but with impulses. In that chapter under which conditions the dynamic system has at least one periodic solution is investigated. To get the result we use Continuation Theorem. Using impulse on this type of dynamic system is also important. Because we can model the real life much better by this way. In Chapter 4, the predator-prey dynamic system with Beddington DeAngelis type functional response on periodic time scales in shifts is studied. In this chapter, first we prove which kind of periodic time scales in shifts should be used to find there is at least one  $\delta_{\pm}$ -periodic solution for the given system. Then again by using Continuation Theorem we get the desired result. In Chapter 5, first we generalize the Constantin's Inequality on Nabla and Diamond- $\alpha$  calculus on time scales. Then by using a topological transversality theorem and using the generalization of Constantin's Inequality on Nabla Calculus, we have showed that the

water percolation equation on nabla time scales calculus has solution. This solution is unique and bounded. The last chapter is the summary of what we have done in this thesis.

As a result, since this study is on time scales, the findings are also important on the discrete and continuous case.

**Keywords:** Generalization of Integral Inequalities, Time Scales Calculus, Predator-Prey Dynamic Systems, Beddington DeAngelis Type Functional Response, Impulses, Constantin's Inequality, Water Percolation Equation

# ÖZ

## BİOLOJİK MATEMATİK VE FİZİKSEL BİLİMLERE UYGULAMALARIYLA BİRLİKTE GENELLEŞTİRİLMİŞ İNTEGRAL EŞİTSİZLİKLERİ ÜZERİNE

Pelen, Neslihan Nesliye

Doktora, Matematik Bölümü

Tez Yöneticisi : Prof. Dr. Mustafa Hurşit Önsiper

Ortak Tez Yöneticisi : Doç. Dr. Ayşe Feza Güvenilir

Ocak 2015, 97 sayfa

Bu tezde genelleştirilmiş integral eşitsizliklerinin özellikle biyomatemiğe ve fiziğe uygulamaları incelenmiştir. Biyomatematik üzerindeki uygulama Beddington DeAngelis tipi fonksiyonel cevabı içinde barındıran iki boyutlu bir av-avcı dinamik sistemi üzerindedir ve fizikle ilgili olan araştırmada su sızdırma denkleminin ilgilidir.

Bu tez 6 bölümden oluşmaktadır. Birinci bölüm giriş niteliğindedir ve tez yapısı hakkında bilgi vermektedir. İkinci bölümdeyse Beddington DeAngelis tipi fonksiyonel cevabı içinde barındıran iki boyutlu bir av-avcı dinamik sisteminin hangi şartlar altında permenent ve global atraktiv çözümlerinin var olduğu incelenmiştir. Üçüncü bölümde Süreklilik Teoremi kullanılarak aynı tip bir dinamik sistem için impuls verilerek hangi şartlar altında en az bir tane periodik çözümünün var olacağı incelendi. Ayrıca bu bölümde sistemin impuls verilmiş halini inceliyoruz çünkü bu bize doğal yaşamın daha iyi bir modellemesini veriyor. Dördüncü Bölümde aynı tip bir dinamik sistemin hangi zaman ötelemelerine göre periodik olan zaman skaları üzerinde en az bir tane  $\delta_{\pm}$ -periodik çözümü vardır diye bakıyoruz ve sonuca ulaşmak için tekrar Süreklilik Teoremini kullanıyoruz. Beşinci Bölümde ise Constantin Eşitsizliğinin Nabla ve Diamond- $\alpha$  analize genelleştirilmesini inceliyoruz ve Nabla analize uygun olarak verilmiş su sızdırma denkleminin çözümünün var ve tek olduğunu ve sınırlı olduğunu bir topolojik transversal teoremi ve Constantin Eşitsizliğinin nabla analize genelleş-

tilmiş halini kullanarak gösterebiliyoruz. Son bölüm ise tezde yapmış olduklarımızın özeti niteliğindedir.

Sonuç olarak çalışmalarımız zaman skalsı üzerinde yapılmış olduđu için sonuçlar bize ayırık ve sürekli sistemlerle ilgili de fikir vermektedir.

Anahtar Kelimeler: Genelleştirilmiş İntegral Eşitsizlikleri, Zaman Skalası Analizi, Av-Avcı Dinamik Sistemleri, Beddington DeAngelis Tipi Fonksiyonel Cevaplar, İmpulslar, Constantin Eşitsizliđi, Su Sızdırma Denklemi

*To my grandparents, parents, brother, husband and son*

*Hüseyin Karaca, Nurullah Aykır, Şerife Aykır, Naile Karaca, Halil Aykır, Mediha Aykır, Ömer Faruk Aykır, Rumi Melih Pelen, Abdullah Yusuf Pelen*

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would like to thank my cosupervisors Assoc. Prof. Ayşe Feza Güvenilir and Prof. Billur Kaymakçalan for their constant support, guidance and friendship. It was a great honor to work with them for the last three years and our cooperation influenced my academical and world view highly. I am also very thankful to them for trusting me and making me courageous about being self-confident. I also would like to thank my supervisor Prof. Mustafa Hurşit Önsiper for his charity about the bureaucratic things about the thesis. In this work about the numerical results there are contributions of Dr. Önder Türk, Assoc. Prof. Canan Bozkaya and Fatma Sidre Oğlakkaya. Thank you for all their contributions.

I am thankful to my husband, Rumi Melih Pelen as my spouse and colleague. He always shares my happiness and trouble in this difficult process. Also he guided me while choosing my cosupervisors. I understand now much better that he is a successful councillor.

I am very thankful to my little baby Abdullah Yusuf. He all brings me chance with his birth and every thing becomes to go on its way.

I am also very thankful to my parents Mediha Aykır, Halil Aykır and my brother Ömer Faruk Aykır. My father and mother always support me about my studies and they make many sacrifices to take care of my son.

I am grateful to all the members of METU Mathematics family, academic and administrative, who provide a friendly working atmosphere.

At last I want to thank Hanife İşal Varlı for her great friendship and especially for her helps when I am alone in Ankara in my first year of the doctorate.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

ABSTRACT . . . . .	v
ÖZ . . . . .	vii
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS . . . . .	x
TABLE OF CONTENTS . . . . .	xi
CHAPTERS	
1 INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1
2 SOME RESULTS ON PREDATOR-PREY DYNAMIC SYSTEMS WITH BEDDINGTON DEANGELIS TYPE FUNCTIONAL RESPONSE ABOUT THE PERMANENCE AND GLOBAL ATTRACTIVITY OF THE SOLUTIONS . . . . .	5
2.1 Preliminaries . . . . .	5
2.2 Predator-Prey Dynamic System with Beddington DeAngelis Type functional Response . . . . .	6
2.3 Permenance . . . . .	6
2.4 Global Attractivity . . . . .	13
3 PERIODIC SOLUTIONS FOR PREDATOR-PREY DYNAMIC SYS- TEMS WITH BEDDINGTON DEANGELIS TYPE FUNCTIONAL RESPONSES AND IMPULSES . . . . .	23
3.1 Preliminaries . . . . .	23
3.2 Main Result . . . . .	24

4	BEHAVIOR OF THE SOLUTIONS FOR PREDATOR-PREY DYNAMIC SYSTEMS WITH BEDDINGTON DEANGELIS TYPE FUNCTIONAL RESPONSE ON PERIODIC TIME SCALES IN SHIFTS . . . . .	47
4.1	Preliminaries . . . . .	47
4.2	Main Result . . . . .	49
5	GENERALIZATION OF CONSTANTIN'S INEQUALITY AND ITS APPLICATION ON WATER PERCOLATION EQUATION . . . . .	59
5.1	Some Basic Definitions Related to Nabla and Diamond- $\alpha$ Time Scales Calculus . . . . .	59
5.2	Literature Review on Constantin's Inequality . . . . .	60
5.3	Some New Results . . . . .	63
5.4	Generalization on Nabla Calculus . . . . .	68
5.5	Generalization on Diamond- $\alpha$ Calculus . . . . .	76
5.6	An Application on Water Percolation Equation on Nabla Time Scales Calculus . . . . .	86
6	CONCLUSION . . . . .	89
	REFERENCES . . . . .	91
	CURRICULUM VITAE . . . . .	95

# CHAPTER 1

## INTRODUCTION

In this thesis, unification of continuous and discrete analysis is significant. For the unification of the differential and difference equations, Stephan Hilger [31] come up with a theory which is known as the theory of Time Scales Calculus.

Another important subject in this thesis is mathematical ecology in biomathematics which can be defined as the relationships between species and the outer environment. The predator-prey dynamic systems can be seen as the subsection of the ecology in biomathematics and can be described as the mathematical model of the connections between different species. For this type of dynamic systems global attractivity and permanence are very important issues. In [13], [25], [52], there are some results about the global attractivity and permanence in different predator- prey dynamic systems. Various type of functional responses such as semi-ratio dependent and Holling-type functional responses in predator-prey dynamic systems have been investigated in several studies like [49], [50]. In this thesis, we consider the predator-prey systems with Beddington DeAngelis type functional response. This type of functional response was first appeared in [6] and [18]. From these studies we know that at low densities this type of functional response can avoid some of the singular behavior of ratio-dependent models. Also predator feeding can be described much better over a range of predator-prey abundances by using this functional response. For such kind of system, boundedness of solution, permanence and global attractivity are also several important topics.

In [25] for discrete predator-prey system with Beddington-DeAngelis type functional response permanence and global attractivity was studied. Also in [21] for continuous

predator-prey system with Beddington-DeAngelis type functional response permanence and global attractivity was studied. Therefore in the second chapter of this thesis we try to investigate the permanence and global attractivity of the solutions of predator-prey dynamic systems with Beddington-DeAngelis type functional response in a general time scale.

In the third chapter of this thesis periodic environment becomes important. On the other hand, in a periodic environment significant problem in population growth model is the global existence and stability of a positive periodic solution. This plays a similar role as a globally stable equilibrium in an autonomous model. Therefore, it is important to consider under which conditions the resulting periodic nonautonomous system would have a positive periodic solution that is globally asymptotically stable. And in the third chapter we deal with when we can be able to find a globally asymptotically stable periodic solution for the given dynamic system in the continuous case. For nonautonomous case there are many studies about the existence of periodic solutions of predator-prey systems in continuous and discrete models based on the coincidence theory such as [20], [22], [23], [24], [25], [33], [37], [49],[53]. Also in [8], [26] unification of the existence of periodic solutions of continuous population models i.e. population model for ordinary differential equations and discrete population models i.e. population model in the form of difference equations and generalization of these results to more general time scales is studied.

Impulsive dynamic systems are also important in the third chapter and we try to give some information about this area. Impulsive differential equations used for describing systems with short-term perturbations. Its theory is explained in [5], [45], [36] for continuous case and also for discrete case there are some studies such as [48]. Impulsive differential equations are widely used in many different areas such as physics, ecology, pest control, population ecology, chemotherapeutic treatment of disease and impulsive birth. Most of them uses impulses at fixed time as it is studied in [47] and [52]. By using constant coefficient functions some properties of the solution of predator-prey system with Beddington-DeAngelis type functional response and impulse impact is studied in [51] for continuous case.

In the fourth chapter, we again consider the predator-prey dynamic system with Bed-

dington DeAngelis type functional response on periodic time scales in shifts. Any periodic time scales in shifts is not appropriate to get a  $\delta_{\pm}$ -periodic solution. Therefore, in this chapter first we determine which kind of periodic time scales in shifts is used. Then again by using Continuation Theorem we try to obtain under which conditions there is a  $\delta_{\pm}$ -periodic solution for the given dynamic system. And we start to think about this issue after the paper of Murat Adıvar[1].

The main contribution of this thesis in these chapters is for the species that have unusual life cycle. Specifically this contribution is about to be able to find conditions when the given species are extinct or they will be able to save their generation and can be able to obtain the equilibria after enough time passes or the life cycle of them are periodic under impulses.

In the fifth chapter, the generalization of Constantin's inequality is given and by using this generalization and a topological transversality theorem; the existence, uniqueness and boundedness of the solutions of the Water Percolation Equation on nabla time scales calculus is investigated.

To study the boundedness of solutions for some nonautonomous second order linear differential equations Ou-Iang [42] used a nonlinear integral inequality. To show global existence, uniqueness and stability properties of various nonlinear differential equations using Ou-Iang type integral inequality is also significant. Pachpatte [43] gave the generalized Ou-Iang type integral inequality. In 1996, for the generalization of these integral inequalities Constantin [14] got the interesting alternative result ; which is known as Constantin's inequality now. Then researchers continue to work on this inequality. Afterwards, Yang and Tan [54] generalized the inequality and gives the discrete form of the inequality. Then, Ferriara [27] generalized the inequality on delta time scales calculus. And our study in chapter five is continuation of above studies.



## CHAPTER 2

### SOME RESULTS ON PREDATOR-PREY DYNAMIC SYSTEMS WITH BEDDINGTON DEANGELIS TYPE FUNCTIONAL RESPONSE ABOUT THE PERMANENCE AND GLOBAL ATTRACTIVITY OF THE SOLUTIONS

#### 2.1 Preliminaries

[8]The theory of time scales calculus is the unification of continuous and discrete analysis and by a time scale which is denoted as  $\mathbb{T}$ , we mean a nonempty closed subset of  $\mathbb{R}$ .

**Definition 2.1.1** [8],[35] *The set  $\mathbb{T}^\kappa$  is defined by  $\mathbb{T}^\kappa = \mathbb{T}/(\rho(\sup\mathbb{T}), \sup\mathbb{T}]$  and the set  $\mathbb{T}_\kappa$  is defined by  $\mathbb{T}_\kappa = \mathbb{T}/[\inf\mathbb{T}, \sigma(\inf\mathbb{T}))$ . The forward jump operator  $\sigma : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{T}$  is defined by  $\sigma(t) := \inf(t, \infty)_{\mathbb{T}}$ , for  $t \in \mathbb{T}$ . The forward graininess function  $\mu : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}_0^+$  is defined by  $\mu(t) := \sigma(t) - t$ , for  $t \in \mathbb{T}$ . Here it is assumed that  $\inf\emptyset = \sup\mathbb{T}$  and  $\sup\emptyset = \inf\mathbb{T}$ .*

**Definition 2.1.2** [8], [35] *A function  $f : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is rd-continuous if it is continuous at right dense points in  $\mathbb{T}$  and its left-sided limits exist at left-dense points in  $\mathbb{T}$ . The class of real rd-continuous functions defined on a time scale  $\mathbb{T}$  is denoted by  $C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ . If  $f \in C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  then there exists a function  $F(t)$  such that  $F^\Delta(t) = f(t)$ . The delta integral is defined by  $\int_a^b f(x)\Delta x = F(b) - F(a)$ . If  $f \in C_{rd}^1(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  then  $f \in C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  and  $f^\Delta \in C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .*

The definitions related with diamond-alpha and nabla derivatives are can be found in section 5.1.

**Theorem 2.1.1** [39](Diamond-alpha Lagrange's mean value theorem) Suppose  $f$  be a delta and nabla differentiable function on  $(a, b)$  and continuous function on  $[a, b]$ . Then there exists  $\alpha \in [0, 1]$  and  $c \in (a, b)$  such that the following equality hold true.

$$f^{\diamond\alpha}(c) = \frac{f(b) - f(a)}{b - a}.$$

## 2.2 Predator-Prey Dynamic System with Beddington DeAngelis Type functional Response

The equation that was investigated in several studies such as in [10]

$$\begin{aligned} x^\Delta(t) &= a(t) - b(t)\exp(x(t)) - \frac{c(t)\exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))}, \\ y^\Delta(t) &= -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))}, \end{aligned} \quad (2.1)$$

In this system, from [50];

1.  $a(t) - b(t)\exp(x(t))$  is the specific growth rate of the prey in the absence of predator,
2.  $d(t)$  is the death rate of predator,
3.  $-\frac{c(t)\exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))}$  is the Beddington DeAngelis type effect of predator on prey,
4.  $\frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))}$  is the Beddington DeAngelis type effect of prey on predator.

## 2.3 Permenance

Taking  $\tilde{x}(t) = \exp(x(t))$  and  $\tilde{y}(t) = \exp(y(t))$  in (2.1), then we get

$$\begin{aligned} (\ln(\tilde{x}(t)))^\Delta &= a(t) - b(t)\tilde{x}(t) - \frac{c(t)\tilde{y}(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\tilde{x}(t) + m(t)\tilde{y}(t)}, \\ (\ln(\tilde{y}(t)))^\Delta &= -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\tilde{x}(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\tilde{x}(t) + m(t)\tilde{y}(t)}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.2)$$

Assume  $a(t), b(t), c(t), d(t), f(t), \beta(t), m(t) > 0$ .  $\alpha(t) \geq 0$  and bounded above in (2.2). Each functions are from  $C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .  $x(t), y(t) \in C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .  $\sup_{t \in \mathbb{T}} a(t) = a^u$ ,  $\inf_{t \in \mathbb{T}} a(t) = a^l$ . Similar for the other functions.

**Definition 2.3.1** [19] We call that the solution  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix}$  of the system (2.2) is positive solution if it is positive on the time domain of the given system.

**Definition 2.3.2** [44] The solution  $\begin{bmatrix} x(t) \\ y(t) \end{bmatrix}$  of the system (2.2) is oscillatory about  $\begin{bmatrix} J_1 \\ J_2 \end{bmatrix}$  if  $\begin{bmatrix} x(t) - J_1 \\ y(t) - J_2 \end{bmatrix}$  has arbitrarily large zeros.

**Definition 2.3.3** [25] The system (2.2) is called permanent if there exist positive constants  $r_1, r_2, R_1$ , and  $R_2$  such that solution  $(x(t), y(t))$  of system (2.2) satisfies

$$\begin{aligned} r_1 &\leq \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \inf \tilde{x}(t) \leq \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup \tilde{x}(t) \leq R_1, \\ r_2 &\leq \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \inf \tilde{y}(t) \leq \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup \tilde{y}(t) \leq R_2. \end{aligned}$$

**Lemma 2.3.1** In system (2.1) if there exists  $T \in \mathbb{T}$  such that for each  $w \geq T$  following inequality

$$-\int_0^w d(t) \Delta t + \int_0^w \frac{f(t)}{\beta(t)} \Delta t < 0$$

holds true, then all positive solutions  $y(t)$  tends to minus infinity as  $t$  tends to infinity, equivalently  $\exp(y(t))$  tends to 0 as  $t$  tends to infinity.

**Proof.**  $y^\Delta(t) = -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))} \leq -d(t) + \frac{f(t)}{\beta(t)}$ . If we integrate this inequality we obtain,

$$\begin{aligned} y(t) &\leq y(0) + \int_0^t -d(s) + \frac{f(s)}{\beta(s)} \Delta s, \\ \exp(y(t)) &\leq \exp(y(0)) \exp\left(\int_0^t -d(s) + \frac{f(s)}{\beta(s)} \Delta s\right). \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\int_0^w -d(t) \Delta t + \int_0^w \frac{f(t)}{\beta(t)} \Delta t < 0$ , then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \exp\left(\int_0^t -d(s) + \frac{f(s)}{\beta(s)} \Delta s\right) = 0$ . Hence  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \exp(y(t)) = 0$ .

□

**Remark 2.3.1** In system (2.2) if  $a(t) < 0$ , then automatically all positive solutions  $\tilde{x}(t) = \exp(x(t))$  tends to 0 as  $t$  tends to infinity

**Remark 2.3.2** If in system (2.2)  $a(t) < 0$ , or the conditions of Lemma 2.3.1 is satisfied then system (2.2) can not be permanent by Definition 2.3.3.

The following results are true for the time scales whose graininess function is bounded over this Time scales and  $\mu = \max_{t \in \mathbb{T}} \mu(t)$ .

**Lemma 2.3.2** For the system (2.2) if conditions for the coefficient functions are satisfied, then

$$\tilde{x}(t) \leq \frac{a^u}{b^l} \exp(\mu a^u) = G_1,$$

$$\text{if } -d^l + \frac{f^u}{\beta^r} \geq 0 \text{ then } \tilde{y}(t) \leq \frac{f^u G_1}{d^l m^l} \exp\left(\mu(-d^l + \frac{f^u}{\beta^r})\right) = G_2.$$

**Proof.** Let us start with the first equation of (2.2),

$$\begin{aligned} (\ln(\tilde{x}(t)))^\Delta &= a(t) - b(t)\tilde{x}(t) - \frac{c(t)\tilde{y}(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\tilde{x}(t) + m(t)\tilde{y}(t)} \\ &\leq a(t) - b(t)\tilde{x}(t) \leq a^u - b^l \tilde{x}(t). \end{aligned} \quad (2.3)$$

Taking  $M_1 = \frac{a^u}{b^l}(k+1)$ , where  $0 < k < \exp\{\mu a^u\} - 1$ . If  $\tilde{x}(t)$  is not oscillatory about  $M_1$ , there exists  $T_1 > 0$  such that  $\tilde{x}(t) > M_1$  for  $t > T_1$  or  $\tilde{x}(t) < M_1$  for  $t > T_1$ .

If  $\tilde{x}(t) < M_1$  for  $t > T_1$ , then  $\tilde{x}(t) \leq \frac{a^u}{b^l} \exp\{\mu a^u\}$ . If  $\tilde{x}(t) > M_1$  for  $t > T_1$ ,

then  $(\ln(\tilde{x}(t)))^\Delta \leq -ka^u$ , hence there exists  $T_2 \in \mathbb{T}$  such that  $T_1 < T_2$  and for  $t > T_2$ ,  $\tilde{x}(t) < M_1$ , which is a contradiction.

If  $\tilde{x}(t)$  is oscillatory about  $M_1$  for  $t > T_1$  and  $\sigma(\tilde{t})$  be an arbitrary local maximum of  $\ln(\tilde{x}(t))$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} 0 \leq (\ln(\tilde{x}(\tilde{t})))^\Delta &= a(\tilde{t}) - b(\tilde{t})\tilde{x}(\tilde{t}) - \frac{c(\tilde{t})\tilde{y}(\tilde{t})}{\alpha(\tilde{t}) + \beta(\tilde{t})\tilde{x}(\tilde{t}) + m(\tilde{t})\tilde{y}(\tilde{t})} \\ &\leq a(\tilde{t}) - b(\tilde{t})\tilde{x}(\tilde{t}) \leq a^u. \end{aligned}$$

Therefore  $\tilde{x}(\tilde{t}) \leq \frac{a(\tilde{t})}{b(\tilde{t})}$ . If  $\tilde{t}$  is right dense then  $\tilde{x}(\sigma(\tilde{t})) \leq \frac{a(\tilde{t})}{b(\tilde{t})}$ . If  $\tilde{t}$  is right scattered, then integrating first equation of (2.2) from  $\tilde{t}$  to  $\sigma(\tilde{t})$  and using (2.3) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{\tilde{t}}^{\sigma(\tilde{t})} (\ln(\tilde{x}(s)))^\Delta \Delta s &= \int_{\tilde{t}}^{\sigma(\tilde{t})} a(s) - b(s)\tilde{x}(s) - \frac{c(s)\tilde{y}(s)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)\tilde{x}(s)+m(s)\tilde{y}(s)} \Delta s \\ &\leq \mu a^u. \\ \tilde{x}(\sigma(\tilde{t})) &\leq \frac{a^u}{b^l} \exp(\mu a^u) = G_1 \end{aligned} \quad (2.4)$$

Since  $\sigma(\tilde{t})$  be an arbitrary local maximum of  $\ln(\tilde{x}(t))$  then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup \tilde{x}(t) \leq G_1$ . Hence  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup x(t) \leq R_1$ .

Consider the second equation of (2.2) and get

$$(\ln(\tilde{y}(t)))^\Delta = -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\tilde{x}(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\tilde{x}(t) + m(t)\tilde{y}(t)} \leq -d(t) + \frac{f(t)}{\beta(t)} \leq -d^l + \frac{f^u}{\beta^l}. \quad (2.5)$$

Taking  $M_2 = \frac{f^u G_1}{d^l m^l} (k + 1)$ , where  $0 < k < \exp\left(\mu(-d^l + \frac{f^u}{\beta^l})\right) - 1$ . If  $\tilde{y}(t)$  is not oscillatory about  $M_2$ , there exists  $T_3 > 0$  such that  $\tilde{y}(t) > M_2$  for  $t > T_3$  or  $\tilde{y}(t) < M_2$  for  $t > T_3$ .

If  $\tilde{y}(t) < M_2$  for  $t > T_3$ , then  $\tilde{y}(t) < \frac{f^u G_1}{d^l m^l} (k + 1)$ . If  $\tilde{y}(t) > M_2$  for  $t > T_3$ , then  $(\ln(\tilde{y}(t)))^\Delta \leq -k \frac{f^u G_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u G_1 + m^u M_2}$ , hence there exists  $T_4 \in \mathbb{T}$  such that  $T_4 > T_3$  and for  $t > T_4$ ,  $\tilde{y}(t) < M_2$ , which is a contradiction.

If  $\tilde{y}(t)$  is oscillatory about  $M_2$  for  $t > T_3$ , let  $\hat{t}$  be an arbitrary local maximum of  $\ln(\tilde{y}(t))$ , then by using second equation of (2.2), we can conclude that

$$\begin{aligned} 0 \leq (\ln(\tilde{y}(\hat{t})))^\Delta &= -d(\hat{t}) + \frac{f(\hat{t})\tilde{x}(\hat{t})}{\alpha(\hat{t})+\beta(\hat{t})\tilde{x}(\hat{t})+m(\hat{t})\tilde{y}(\hat{t})} \\ &= \frac{-d(\hat{t})\alpha(\hat{t})-d(\hat{t})\beta(\hat{t})\tilde{x}(\hat{t})-d(\hat{t})m(\hat{t})\tilde{y}(\hat{t})+f(\hat{t})\tilde{x}(\hat{t})}{\alpha(\hat{t})+\beta(\hat{t})\tilde{x}(\hat{t})+m(\hat{t})\tilde{y}(\hat{t})} \\ &\leq \frac{-d(\hat{t})m(\hat{t})\tilde{y}(\hat{t})+f(\hat{t})G_1}{\beta(\hat{t})\tilde{x}(\hat{t})}. \end{aligned}$$

Therefore,  $\tilde{y}(\hat{t}) \leq \frac{f(\hat{t})G_1}{d(\hat{t})m(\hat{t})}$ . If  $\hat{t}$  is right dense then  $\tilde{y}(\sigma(\hat{t})) \leq \frac{f(\hat{t})G_1}{d(\hat{t})m(\hat{t})}$ .

If  $\hat{t}$  is right scattered, integrate (2.5) from  $\hat{t}$  to  $\sigma(\hat{t})$  for the same  $w$  above and we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{\hat{t}}^{\sigma(\hat{t})} (\ln(\tilde{y}(s)))^\Delta \Delta s &= \int_{\hat{t}}^{\sigma(\hat{t})} -d(s) + \frac{f(s)\tilde{x}(s)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)\tilde{x}(s)+m(s)\tilde{y}(s)} \Delta s \\ &\leq \mu(-d^l + \frac{f^u}{\beta^l}). \end{aligned}$$

$$\tilde{y}(\sigma(\hat{t})) \leq \frac{f^u G_1}{d^l m^l} \exp\left(\mu\left(-d^l + \frac{f^u}{\beta^l}\right)\right) = G_2. \quad (2.6)$$

Since  $\sigma(\hat{t})$  be an arbitrary local maximum of  $\ln(\tilde{y}(t))$  then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup \tilde{y}(t) \leq G_2$ .  
Hence  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup y(t) \leq R_2$ .  $\square$

**Remark 2.3.3** *If for the system (2.1) all the solutions of  $\exp(y(t))$  does not tend to 0 as  $t$  tends to infinity (by Lemma 2.3.1) then Lemma 2.3.2 is otomatically true.*

**Lemma 2.3.3** *For (2.2) when  $\tilde{x}(t) \leq G_1$ ,  $a^l - b^u G_1 - \frac{c^u}{m^l} \leq 0$ ,  $a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l} \geq 0$  is satisfied then*

$$\tilde{x}(t) \geq \frac{1}{b^u} \left(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l}\right) \exp\left(\mu\left(a^l - b^u G_1 - \frac{c^u}{m^l}\right)\right) = \tilde{g}_1,$$

when  $\tilde{y}(t) \leq G_2$ ,  $-d^u \alpha^u - (d^u \beta^u - f^l) \tilde{g}_1 \geq 0$ ,

$-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2} \leq 0$  is satisfied then

$$\tilde{y}(t) \geq \frac{1}{d^u m^u} \left(-d^u \alpha^u - (d^u \beta^u - f^l) \tilde{g}_1\right) \exp\left(\mu\left(-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2}\right)\right).$$

**Proof.** Consider the first equation of (2.2)

$$\begin{aligned} (\ln(\tilde{x}(t)))^\Delta &= a(t) - b(t)\tilde{x}(t) - \frac{c(t)\tilde{y}(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\tilde{x}(t) + m(t)\tilde{y}(t)} \\ &\geq a(t) - b(t)\tilde{x}(t) - \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \\ &\geq a^l - b^u \tilde{x}(t) - \frac{c^u}{m^l} \\ &\geq a^l - b^u G_1 - \frac{c^u}{m^l}. \end{aligned} \quad (2.7)$$

If  $a^l - b^u G_1 - \frac{c^u}{m^l} > 0$ , then there exist  $\tilde{T}$  such that  $t > \tilde{T}$ ,  $\tilde{x}(t) > G_1$ , for  $t > \tilde{T}$ . So there is a contradiction. Therefore  $a^l - b^u G_1 - \frac{c^u}{m^l} \leq 0$ .

Take  $N_1 = \frac{1}{b^u} \left(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l}\right) (1 - \tilde{q})$ , where  $\tilde{q} = 1 - \exp\left(w\left(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l} - b^u G_1\right)\right)$ . Suppose that  $\tilde{x}(t)$  is not oscillatory around  $N_1$ . Then there exists  $T_5$ , such that  $\tilde{x}(t) > N_1$  for  $t > T_5$  or  $\tilde{x}(t) < N_1$  for  $t > T_5$ . If  $\tilde{x}(t) > N_1$  for  $t > T_5$ , then  $\tilde{x}(t)$  satisfies the

desired result. Since  $\tilde{x} \geq 0$ , then the condition  $a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l} \geq 0$  must be satisfied. If  $\tilde{x}(t) < N_1$  for  $t > T_5$ , then  $(\ln(\tilde{x}(t)))^\Delta \geq (a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l})\tilde{q}$ . Since  $(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l})\tilde{q} > 0$ , then there exists  $T_6$  such that for  $t > T_6$   $\tilde{x}(t) > N_1$  which is a contradiction. Suppose that  $\tilde{x}(t)$  is oscillatory around  $N_1$  and  $\sigma(t_1)$  be an arbitrary local minimum of  $\ln(\tilde{x}(t))$ , thus

$$\begin{aligned} 0 \geq (\ln(\tilde{x}(t_1)))^\Delta &= a(t_1) - b(t_1)\tilde{x}(t_1) - \frac{c(t_1)\tilde{y}(t_1)}{\alpha(t_1)+\beta(t_1)\tilde{x}(t_1)+m(t_1)\tilde{y}(t_1)} \\ &\geq a(t_1) - b(t_1)\tilde{x}(t_1) - \frac{c(t_1)}{m(t_1)}. \end{aligned}$$

Then we have,

$$\frac{1}{b^u}(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l}) \leq \frac{1}{b(t_1)}(a(t_1) - \frac{c(t_1)}{m(t_1)}) \leq \tilde{x}(t_1)$$

If  $t_1$  is right dense then also  $\tilde{x}(\sigma(t_1)) \geq \frac{1}{b^u}(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l})$ . If  $t_1$  is right scattered, then integrate (2.7) from  $t_1$  to  $\sigma(t_1)$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{t_1}^{\sigma(t_1)} (\ln(\tilde{x}(t)))^\Delta \Delta t &= \int_{t_1}^{\sigma(t_1)} a(t) - b(t)\tilde{x}(t) - \frac{c(t)\tilde{y}(t)}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)\tilde{x}(t)+m(t)\tilde{y}(t)} \Delta t \\ &\geq \mu \left( a(t_1) - b(t_1)G_1 - \frac{c(t_1)}{m(t_1)} \Delta t \right). \end{aligned}$$

$$\tilde{x}(\sigma(t_1)) \geq \frac{1}{b^u}(a^l - \frac{c^u}{m^l}) \exp \left( \mu \left( a^l - b^u G_1 - \frac{c^u}{m^l} \right) \right) = \tilde{g}_1.$$

Since  $\tilde{x}(\sigma(t_1))$  is the arbitrary local minimum, then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \inf \tilde{x}(t) \leq \tilde{g}_1$ ,

i.e.  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup x(t) \leq r_1$ .

Consider the second equation of (2.2)

$$\begin{aligned} (\ln(\tilde{y}(t)))^\Delta &= -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\tilde{x}(t)}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)\tilde{x}(t)+m(t)\tilde{y}(t)} \\ &\geq -d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2} \end{aligned} \quad (2.8)$$

If  $-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2} > 0$ , then there exists  $T_7$  such that for  $t > T_7$ ,  $\tilde{y}(t) > G_2$  which is a contradiction. Thus  $-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2} \leq 0$ . Let us take  $N_2$  such that

$$N_2 = \frac{1}{d^u m^u} (-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1)(1 - r)$$

where

$r = 1 - \exp\left(\mu\left(-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2}\right)\right)$ . Assume  $\tilde{y}(t)$  is not oscillatory around  $N_2$ .

Then there exists  $T_8$ , such that for  $t > T_8$   $\tilde{y}(t) > N_2$  or  $\tilde{y}(t) < N_2$ .

For the first case  $\tilde{y}(t) > \frac{1}{d^u m^u}(-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1) \exp\left(\mu\left(-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2}\right)\right)$ .

Since  $\tilde{y} \geq 0$ , then  $-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1 \geq 0$ .

For the second case  $(\ln(\tilde{y}(t)))^\Delta > \left(\frac{1}{d^u m^u (\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2)}(-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1)\right)r$ .

Since  $-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1 > 0$  there exists  $T_9$ , such that for  $t > T_9$   $\tilde{y}(t) > N_2$ , which is a contradiction.

Assume  $\tilde{y}(t)$  is oscillatory around  $N_2$  and  $\sigma(t_2)$  be an arbitrary local minimum of  $\ln(\tilde{y}(t))$ , then by (2.8), we have

$$\begin{aligned} 0 \geq (\ln(\tilde{y}(t_2)))^\Delta &= \frac{-d(t_2)\alpha(t_2) - d(t_2)\beta(t_2)\tilde{x}(t_2) - d(t_2)m(t_2)\tilde{y}(t_2) + f(t_2)\tilde{x}(t_2)}{\alpha(t_2) + \beta(t_2)\tilde{x}(t_2) + m(t_2)\tilde{y}(t_2)} \\ &\geq \frac{-d(t_2)\alpha(t_2) - d(t_2)\beta(t_2)\tilde{g}_1 - d(t_2)m(t_2)\tilde{y}(t_2) + f(t_2)\tilde{g}_1}{\alpha(t_2) + \beta(t_2)\tilde{g}_1 + m(t_2)\tilde{y}(t_2)}. \end{aligned}$$

So we get  $\tilde{y}(t_2) \geq \frac{1}{d(t_2)m(t_2)}(-d(t_2)\alpha(t_2) - d(t_2)\beta(t_2)\tilde{g}_1 + f(t_2)\tilde{g}_1)$ .

Thus  $\tilde{y}(t_2) \geq \frac{1}{d^u m^u}(-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1)$ .

If  $t_2$  is right dense, also  $\tilde{y}(\sigma(t_2)) \geq \frac{1}{d^u m^u}(-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1)$ .

If  $t_2$  is right scattered, we integrate (2.8) from  $t_2$  to  $\sigma(t_2)$  we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{t_2}^{\sigma(t_2)} (\ln(\tilde{y}(t)))^\Delta \Delta t &= \int_{t_2}^{\sigma(t_2)} -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\tilde{x}(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\tilde{x}(t) + m(t)\tilde{y}(t)} \Delta t \\ &\geq \mu\left(-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u G_1 + m^u G_2}\right). \end{aligned}$$

$\tilde{y}(\sigma(t_2)) \geq \frac{1}{d^u m^u}(-d^u \alpha^u - d^u \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + f^l \tilde{g}_1) \exp\left(\mu\left(-d^u + \frac{f^l \tilde{g}_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \tilde{g}_1 + m^u G_2}\right)\right)$ .

Since  $\tilde{y}(\sigma(t_2))$  is the arbitrary local minimum, then  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \inf \tilde{y}(t) \leq \tilde{g}_2$ , i.e.  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup y(t) \leq r_2$ .  $\square$

If (2.1) satisfies all the conditions of Lemma 2.3.2 and Lemma 2.3.3, then its solution is permanent.

**Example 2.3.1**  $\mathbb{T} = [2k, 2k + 1]$ ,  $k \in \mathbb{N}$   $k$  start with 0.

$$x^\Delta(t) = \left(2 - \frac{1}{2t+2}\right) - \exp(x) - \frac{0.5\exp(y)}{\exp(x)+\exp(y)},$$

$$y^\Delta(t) = -1 + \frac{(3+\frac{1}{t+1})\exp(x)}{\exp(x)+\exp(y)}.$$

Example 2.3.1 satisfies all of the conditions of Lemma 2.3.2 and Lemma 2.3.3, therefore its solutions are permanent.

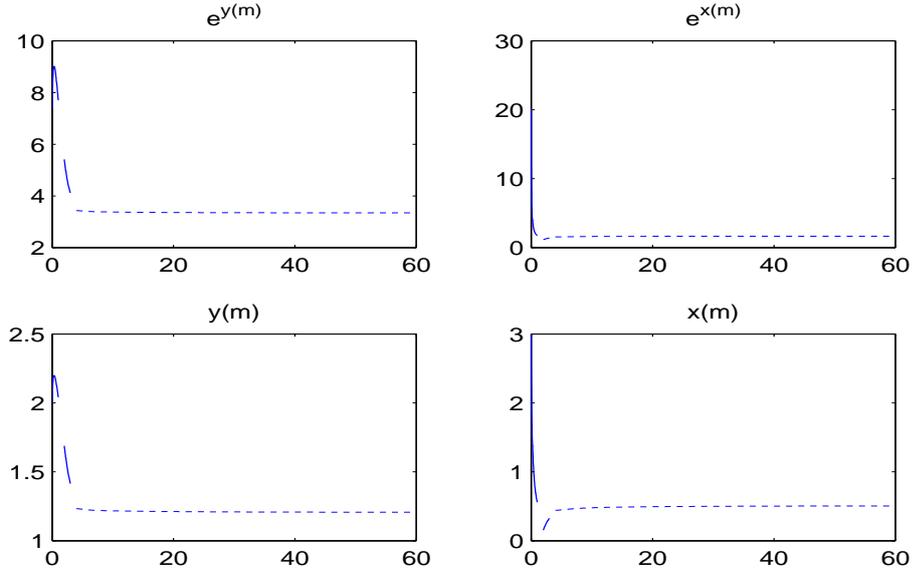


Figure 2.1: Numeric solution of Example 2.3.1 shows the permanence.

## 2.4 Global Attractivity

**Definition 2.4.1** [25] A positive solution  $(x^*(t), y^*(t))$  of (2.2) is said to be globally attractive if each other positive solution  $(x(t), y(t))$  of (2.2) satisfies

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} |x^*(t) - x(t)| = 0, \quad \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} |y^*(t) - y(t)| = 0.$$

**Theorem 2.4.1** In addition to conditions of Lemma 2.3.2 and Lemma 2.3.3

if  $a_1, a_2 \in (0, 1)$  and  $\delta > 0$

$$\left( a_1 \min \left\{ b^l, \frac{2}{G_1 \mu^u} - b^u \right\} - \left[ a_1 \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_2^{1/3}}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} + a_2 \frac{f^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3}}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} \right. \right. \\ \left. \left. + a_2 \frac{f^u (m^u)^{1/3} G_2^{2/3}}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (\beta^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} \right], a_2 \min \left\{ \frac{f^l g_1 m^l}{(\alpha^u + \beta^u G_1 + m^u G_2)^2}, \frac{2}{G_2 \mu^u} - \frac{f^u G_1 m^u}{(\alpha^l + \beta^l g_1 + m^l g_2)^2} \right\} \right. \\ \left. - \left[ a_1 \frac{c^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3}}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + a_1 \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_1^{2/3}}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{1/3} g_2^{2/3}} \right] \right) > \delta,$$

then system (2.2) is globally attractive.

**Proof.** For any positive solutions  $(x_1(t), y_1(t))$  and  $(x_2(t), y_2(t))$  of system (2.1), it follows from Lemma 2.3.2 and Lemma 2.3.3;

$$\liminf_{t \rightarrow \infty} x_i(t) < g_1, \limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} x_i(t) < G_1, \liminf_{t \rightarrow \infty} y_i(t) < g_2,$$

$$\limsup_{t \rightarrow \infty} y_i(t) < G_2 \text{ for } i = 1, 2.$$

Let  $V_1(t) = |\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)|$ ,  $A = \alpha + \beta x_1(t) + m(t)y_1(t)$ ,  $B = \alpha + \beta x_2(t) + m(t)y_2(t)$ . If  $t$  is right scattered,

$$\begin{aligned} V_1^\Delta(t) &= \frac{V_1(\sigma(t)) - V_1(t)}{\mu(t)} \\ &= \frac{|\ln x_1(\sigma(t)) - \ln x_2(\sigma(t))| - |\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)|}{\mu(t)} \\ &\leq \frac{1}{\mu(t)} |\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t) - \mu(t)b(t)[x_1(t) - x_2(t)]| - \frac{1}{\mu(t)} |\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)| \\ &+ c(t) \left| \frac{\beta(t)y_1(t)[x_1(t) - x_2(t)]}{AB} \right| + c(t) \left| \frac{\alpha(t)[y_1(t) - y_2(t)]}{AB} \right| + c(t) \left| \frac{\beta(t)x_1(t)[y_1(t) - y_2(t)]}{AB} \right|. \end{aligned}$$

Assume  $\xi(t)$  is between  $x_1(t)$  and  $x_2(t)$ , then using Diamond-alpha Lagrange's mean value theorem and taking  $\alpha = 1$  we get,

$$\begin{aligned} x_1(t) - x_2(t) &= \exp(\ln x_1(t)) - \exp(\ln x_2(t)) \\ &= \xi(t)(\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)). \end{aligned} \tag{2.9}$$

Since exp function satisfies all of the conditions of Theorem 2.1.1, we can obtain equality (2.9).

If  $t$  is right scattered, using Young's inequality and (2.9) we obtain,

$$\begin{aligned} V_1^\Delta(t) &\leq -\frac{1}{\mu(t)} \left[ \frac{1}{\xi(t)} - \left| \frac{1}{\xi(t)} - \mu(t)b(t) \right| \right] |x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + \left| \frac{c(t)\beta^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)[x_1(t) - x_2(t)]}{9\alpha^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} \right| \\ &+ \frac{c(t)\alpha^{1/3}(t)|y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9\beta^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} + \frac{c(t)\beta^{1/3}(t)x_1^{2/3}(t)|y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9\alpha^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} \end{aligned}$$

$$V_1^\Delta(t) \leq -\min \left\{ b^l, \frac{2}{G_1 \mu^u} - b^u \right\} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_2^{1/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} \\ + \frac{c^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3} |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_1^{2/3} |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{1/3} g_2^{2/3}}.$$

If  $t$  is right dense, then delta- differentiation becomes equal with the normal differentiation thus we can write,

$$V_1'(t) = \operatorname{sgn}(\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)) \left( \frac{x_1'(t)}{x_1(t)} - \frac{x_2'(t)}{x_2(t)} \right) = \\ = \operatorname{sgn}(\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)) \left( -b(t)(x_1(t) - x_2(t)) - \frac{c(t)y_1(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)x_1(t) + m(t)y_1(t)} + \frac{c(t)y_2(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)x_2(t) + m(t)y_2(t)} \right)$$

Since  $\operatorname{sgn}(\ln x_1(t) - \ln x_2(t)) = \operatorname{sgn}(x_1(t) - x_2(t))$ , then

$$V_1'(t) \leq -b(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + c(t) \frac{\beta(t)y_1(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{AB} \\ + c(t) \left| \frac{\alpha(t)[y_1(t) - y_2(t)]}{AB} \right| + c(t) \left| \frac{\beta(t)x_1(t)[y_1(t) - y_2(t)]}{AB} \right| \\ \leq -b^l|x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + \frac{c(t)\beta^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9\alpha^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} + \\ + \frac{c(t)\alpha^{1/3}(t)|y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9\beta^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} + \frac{c(t)\beta^{1/3}(t)x_1^{2/3}(t)|y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9\alpha^{2/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} \\ \leq -b^l|x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_2^{1/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} + \\ + \frac{c^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3} |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_1^{2/3} |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{1/3} g_2^{2/3}}.$$

Therefore

$$V_1^\Delta(t) \leq -\min \left\{ b^l, \frac{2}{G_1 \mu^u} - b^u \right\} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_2^{1/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} \\ + \frac{c^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3} |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_1^{2/3} |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{1/3} g_2^{2/3}}.$$

Let  $V_2(t) = |\ln y_1(t) - \ln y_2(t)|$ . Now assume  $\xi_2(t)$  lies between  $y_1(t)$  and  $y_2(t)$ , therefore by using Diamond-alpha Lagrange's mean value theorem and taking  $\alpha = 1$ , we have

$$y_1(t) - y_2(t) = \exp(\ln y_1(t)) - \exp(\ln y_2(t)) \\ = \xi_2(t)(\ln y_1(t) - \ln y_2(t)). \quad (2.10)$$

Since exp function satisfies all of the conditions of Theorem 2.1.1, we can get equality (2.10).

If  $t$  is a right scattered point, by (2.10) we have

$$\begin{aligned} V_2^\Delta(t) &\leq -\frac{1}{\mu(t)} \left[ \frac{1}{\xi_2(t)} - \left| \frac{1}{\xi_2(t)} - \mu(t) \frac{f(t)x_1(t)m(t)}{AB} \right| \right] |y_1(t) - y_2(t)| \\ &+ \frac{f(t)\alpha^{1/3}(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9\beta^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} + \frac{f(t)m^{1/3}(t)y_1^{2/3}(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9\alpha^{2/3}(t)\beta^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)}} \\ &\leq -\min \left\{ \frac{f^l g_1 m^l}{A^u B^u}, \frac{2}{G_2 \mu^u} - \frac{f^u G_1 m^u}{A^l B^l} \right\} + \frac{f^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + \frac{f^u (m^u)^{1/3} G_2^{2/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (\beta^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} \end{aligned}$$

If  $t$  is right dense, since delta- differentiation becomes equal with the normal differentiation therefore we have

$$\begin{aligned} V_2'(t) &= \operatorname{sgn}(\ln y_1(t) - \ln y_2(t)) \left( \frac{y_1'(t)}{y_1(t)} - \frac{y_2'(t)}{y_2(t)} \right) \\ &= \operatorname{sgn}(\ln y_1(t) - \ln y_2(t)) \left( \frac{f(t)x_1(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)x_1(t) + m(t)y_1(t)} - \frac{f(t)x_2(t)}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)x_2(t) + m(t)y_2(t)} \right) \\ &\leq -\frac{f(t)x_1(t)m(t)}{AB} |y_1(t) - y_2(t)| + \frac{f(t)\alpha^{1/3}(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9\beta^{2/3}(t)m^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_1^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} \\ &\quad + \frac{f(t)m^{1/3}(t)y_1^{2/3}(t)|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9\alpha^{2/3}(t)\beta^{2/3}(t)x_1^{1/3}(t)x_2^{1/3}(t)y_2^{1/3}(t)} \\ &\leq -\frac{f^l g_1 m^l}{A^u B^u} |y_1(t) - y_2(t)| + \frac{f^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + \frac{f^u (m^u)^{1/3} G_2^{2/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (\beta^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} \end{aligned}$$

Thus

$$\begin{aligned} V_2^\Delta(t) &\leq -\min \left\{ \frac{f^l g_1 m^l}{A^u B^u}, \frac{2}{G_2 \mu^u} - \frac{f^u G_1 m^u}{A^l B^l} \right\} + \frac{f^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} \\ &\quad + \frac{f^u (m^u)^{1/3} G_2^{2/3} |x_1(t) - x_2(t)|}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (\beta^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}}. \end{aligned}$$

Let us define a Lyapunov function as:  $V(t) = a_1 V_1(t) + a_2 V_2(t)$ ,  $a_1, a_2 \in (0, 1)$ .

$$V^\Delta(t) = a_1 V_1^\Delta(t) + a_2 V_2^\Delta(t).$$

$$\begin{aligned} V^\Delta(t) &\leq -\left( a_1 \min \left\{ b^l, \frac{2}{G_1 \mu^u} - b^u \right\} - \left( a_1 \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_2^{1/3}}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} + a_2 \frac{f^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3}}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} \right. \right. \\ &\quad \left. \left. + a_2 \frac{f^u (m^u)^{1/3} G_2^{2/3}}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (\beta^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{1/3}} \right) \right) |x_1(t) - x_2(t)| - \left( a_2 \min \left\{ \frac{f^l g_1 m^l}{A^u B^u}, \frac{2}{G_2 \mu^u} - \frac{f^u G_1 m^u}{A^l B^l} \right\} \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \left( a_1 \frac{c^u (\alpha^u)^{1/3}}{9(\beta^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{2/3} g_2^{2/3}} + a_1 \frac{c^u (\beta^u)^{1/3} G_1^{2/3}}{9(\alpha^l)^{2/3} (m^l)^{2/3} g_1^{1/3} g_2^{2/3}} \right) \right) |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|. \end{aligned}$$

By assumption

$$V^\Delta(t) < -\delta[|x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|]$$

Integrating both sides of the above inequality from  $t_1$  to  $t$ , we get

$$\int_{t_1}^t V^\Delta(s) \Delta s < -\delta \int_{t_1}^t [|x_1(s) - x_2(s)| + |y_2(s) - y_1(s)|] \Delta s$$

$$\int_{t_1}^t [|x_1(s) - x_2(s)| + |y_2(s) - y_1(s)|] \Delta s < \frac{V_1(t_1)}{\delta}$$

Then

$$\int_{t_1}^t [|x_1(s) - x_2(s)| + |y_2(s) - y_1(s)|] \Delta s < +\infty$$

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} [|x_1(t) - x_2(t)| + |y_2(t) - y_1(t)|] = 0$$

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} [|x_1(t) - x_2(t)|] = 0 \text{ and } \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} [|y_1(t) - y_2(t)|] = 0.$$

Hence proof follows. □

**Corollary 2.4.1** *In addition to conditions of Lemma 2.3.2 and Lemma 2.3.3*

*if  $a_1, a_2 \in (0, 1)$ ,  $\alpha(t) = 0$  and  $\delta > 0$*

$$a_2 \min \left\{ \frac{f^l g_1 m^l}{(\beta^u G_1 + m^u G_2)^2}, \frac{2}{G_2 \mu^u} - \frac{f^u G_1 m^u}{(\beta^l g_1 + m^l g_2)^2} \right\} - \left[ a_1 \frac{c^u G_2^{1/2}}{4m^l g_1 g_2^{1/2}} + a_2 \frac{f^u G_2^{1/2}}{4\beta^l g_1 g_2^{1/2}} \right] > \delta,$$

*then system (2.2) is globally attractive.*

**Example 2.4.1**  $\mathbb{T} = [2k, 2k + 1]$ ,  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  *k start with 0.*

$$x^\Delta(t) = (0.5 - \frac{0.1}{t+1}) - \exp(x) - \frac{0.01 \exp(y)}{\exp(x) + \exp(y)},$$

$$y^\Delta(t) = -0.1 + \frac{0.2 \exp(x)}{\exp(x) + \exp(y)}.$$

Example 2.4.1 satisfies Corollary 2.4.1, therefore solution of this system is globally attractive.

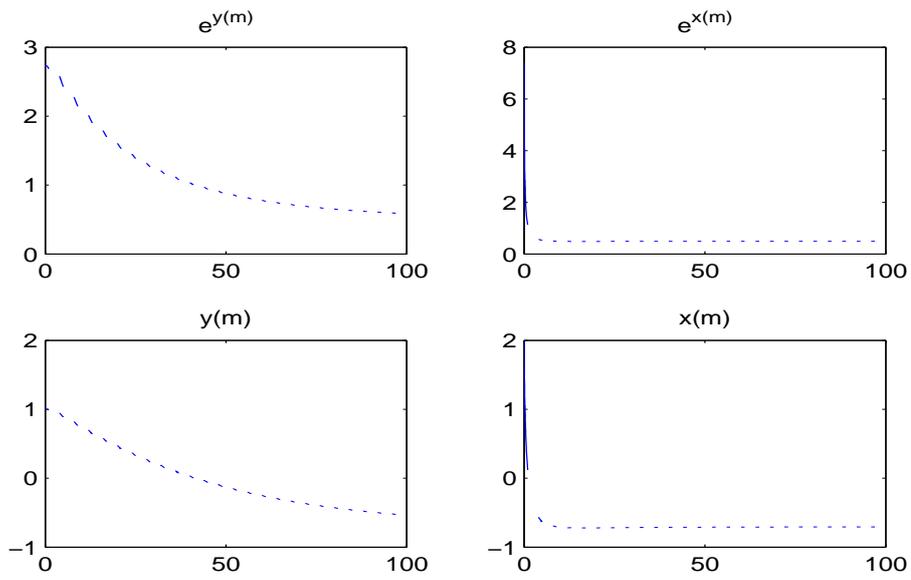


Figure 2.2: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=3, y(0)=2$ .

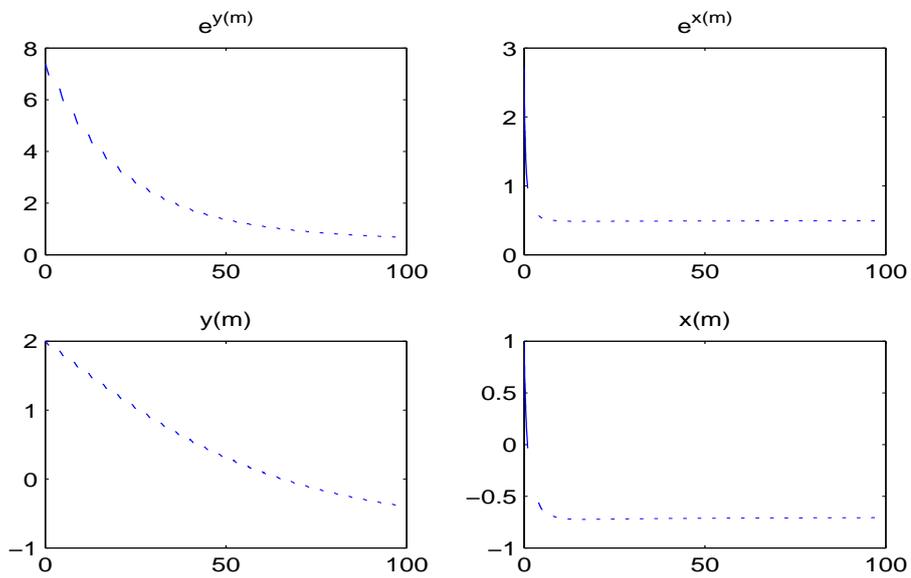


Figure 2.3: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=2, y(0)=3$ .

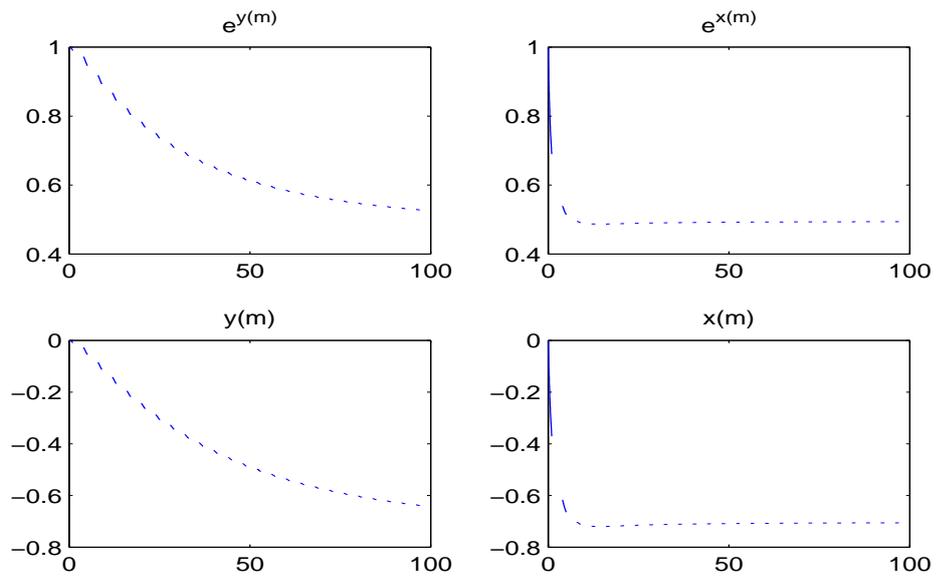


Figure 2.4: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=0, y(0)=0$ .

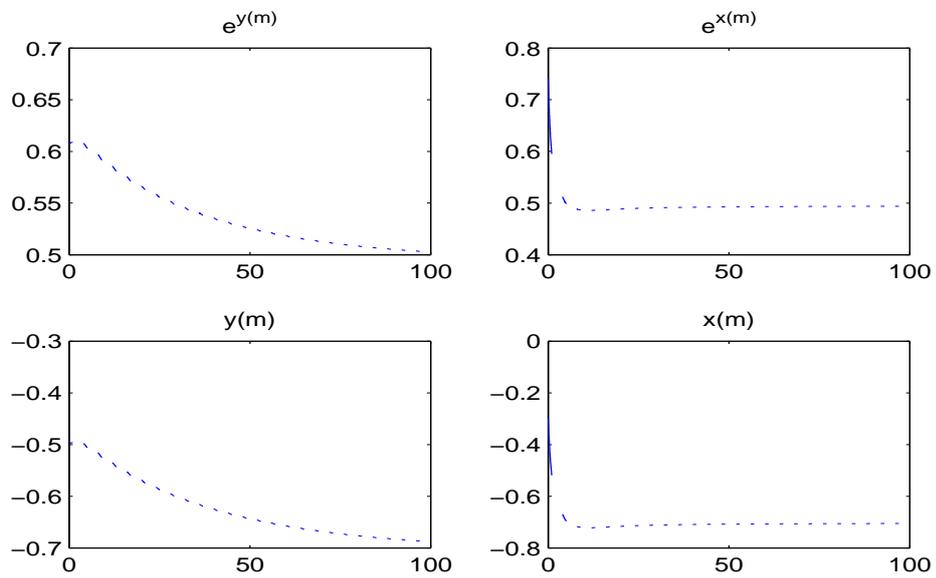


Figure 2.5: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=-0.3, y(0)=-0.5$ .

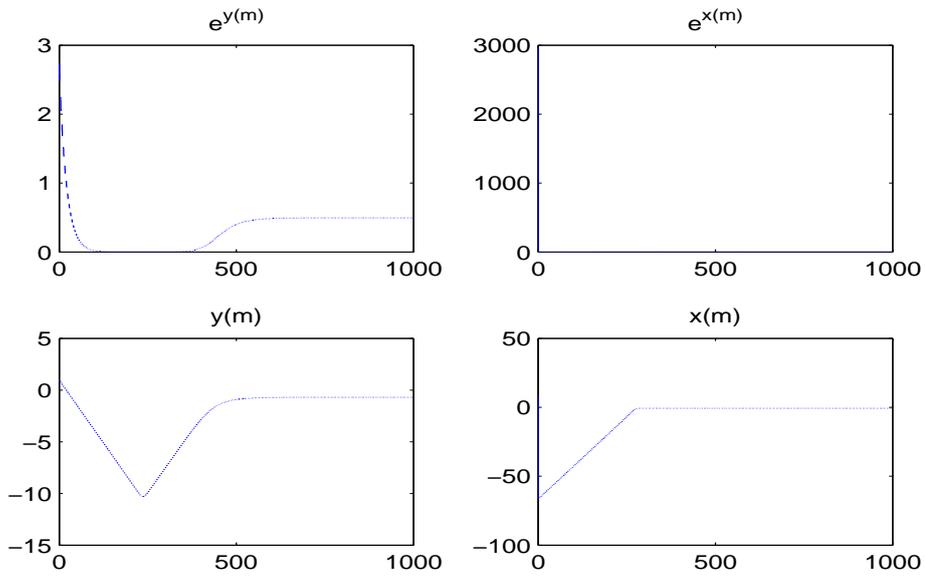


Figure 2.6: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=8$ ,  $y(0)=1$ .

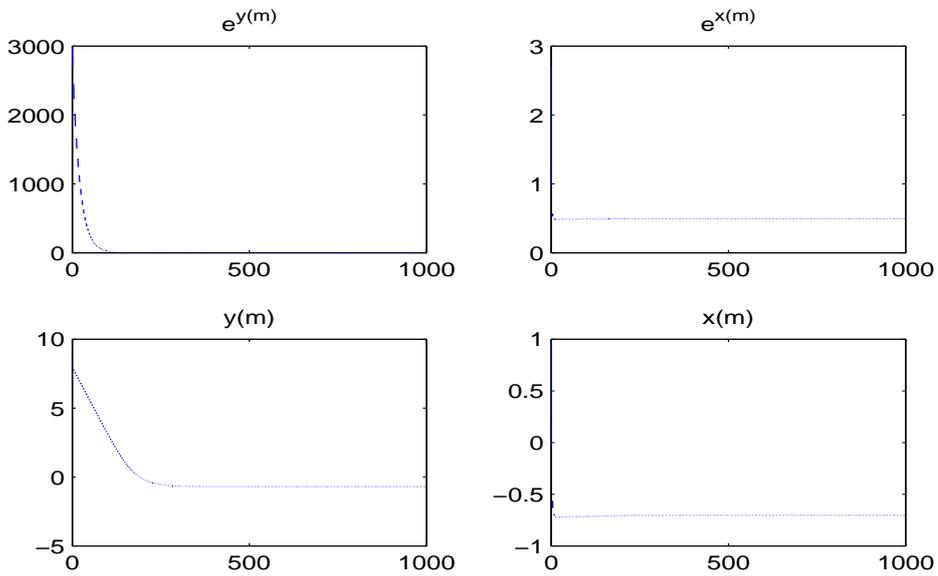


Figure 2.7: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=1$ ,  $y(0)=8$ .

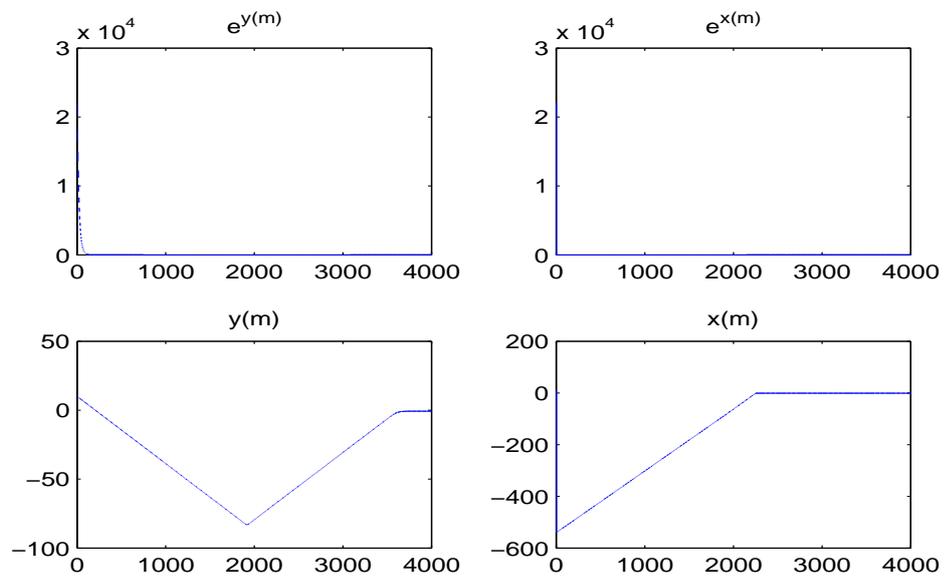


Figure 2.8: Initial conditions in this example is  $x(0)=10$ ,  $y(0)=10$ . Although we take seven different initial conditions, solutions  $(\exp(x(t)), \exp(y(t)))$  approaches to 0.5 in each case. Therefore numeric solution of Example 2.4.1 shows the global attractivity.



## CHAPTER 3

### PERIODIC SOLUTIONS FOR PREDATOR-PREY DYNAMIC SYSTEMS WITH BEDDINGTON DEANGELIS TYPE FUNCTIONAL RESPONSES AND IMPULSES

#### 3.1 Preliminaries

Below informations are from [10]. Let  $L : DomL \subset X \rightarrow Y$  be a linear mapping,  $C : X \rightarrow Y$  be a continuous mapping where  $X, Y$  be normed vector spaces. If  $dimKerL = codimImL < +\infty$  and  $ImL$  is closed in  $Y$ , then the mapping  $L$  will be called a Fredholm mapping of index zero. There exist continuous projections  $U : X \rightarrow X$  and  $V : Y \rightarrow Y$  when  $L$  is a Fredholm mapping of index zero such that  $ImU = KerL, ImL = KerV = Im(I - V)$ , then it follows that  $L|_{DomL \cap KerU} : (I - U)X \rightarrow ImL$  is invertible. The inverse of that map is denoted as  $K_U$ . The mapping  $C$  will be called  $L$ -compact on  $\Omega$  if  $VC(\Omega)$  is bounded and  $K_U(I - V)C : \Omega \rightarrow X$  is compact, where  $\Omega$  is an open bounded subset of  $X$ . Since  $ImV$  is isomorphic to  $KerL$ , the isomorphism  $J : ImV \rightarrow KerL$  is exist and the above informations are important for the Continuation Theorem that we give below.

**Definition 3.1.1** [11] *The codimension (or quotient or factor dimension) of a subspace  $L$  of a vector space  $V$  is the dimension of the quotient space  $V/L$ ; it is denoted by  $codim_V L$  or simply by  $codimL$  and is equal to the dimension of the orthogonal complement of  $L$  in  $V$  and one has  $dimL + codimL = dimV$ .*

**Theorem 3.1.1** [10] *(Continuation Theorem). Let  $L$  be a Fredholm mapping of index zero and  $C$  be  $L$ -compact on  $\Omega$ . Assume*

(a) For each  $\lambda \in (0, 1)$ , any  $y$  satisfying  $Ly = \lambda Cy$  is not on  $\delta\Omega$ , i.e.  $y \notin \delta\Omega$ ;

(b) For each  $y \in \delta\Omega \cap \text{Ker}L$ ,  $V Cy \neq 0$  and the Brouwer degree

$\text{deg}\{JVC, \delta\Omega \cap \text{Ker}L, 0\} \neq 0$ . Then  $Ly = Cy$  has at least one solution lying in  $\text{Dom}L \cap \delta\Omega$ .

We will also give the following lemma, which is essential for this paper.

**Lemma 3.1.1** [10] Let  $\tau_1, \tau_2 \in [0, \omega]$  and  $t \in \mathbb{T}$ . If  $f : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is  $\omega$ -periodic, then

$$f(t) \leq f(\tau_1) + \int_0^\omega |f^\Delta(s)| \Delta s \quad \text{and} \quad f(t) \geq f(\tau_2) - \int_0^\omega |f^\Delta(s)| \Delta s.$$

**Remark 3.1.1** In the study of [38] for predator-prey dynamic models with several type of functional responses with impulses on time scales is studied and they found a general result. On the other hand on their study only the effect of functional response is seen on the prey, but on predator the effect of the given functional response can not be seen. Therefore our results are also important since the impact of Beddington DeAngelis type functional response is taken into account for both prey and predator.

**Definition 3.1.2** [32] If a function is regulated and it is rd-continuous at all except possibly at finitely many right dense points  $t \in \mathbb{T}$ , then this function is called piecewise rd-continuous function and the class of piecewise rd-continuous functions denoted as  $C_{prd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .

### 3.2 Main Result

The equation that we investigate is:

$$\begin{aligned} x^\Delta(t) &= a(t) - b(t)\exp(x(t)) - \frac{c(t)\exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))}, t \neq t_k \\ y^\Delta(t) &= -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))}, t \neq t_k \\ \Delta x(t_k) &= \ln(1 + g_k) \\ \Delta y(t_k) &= \ln(r_k) \end{aligned} \tag{3.1}$$

where  $t_{k+q} = t_k + w$ ,  $a(t+w) = a(t)$ ,  $b(t+w) = b(t)$ ,  $c(t+w) = c(t)$ ,  $d(t+w) = d(t)$ ,  $f(t+w) = f(t)$ ,  $\alpha(t+w) = \alpha(t)$ ,  $\beta(t+w) = \beta(t)$ ,  $m(t+w) = m(t)$ ,  $\forall k, 1 > g_k > -1$ ,

and  $r_k > 0$ . Here  $\mathbb{T}$  is periodic, i.e if  $t \in \mathbb{T}$  then  $t + w \in \mathbb{T}$ , and  $\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t > 0$ ,  $\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t > 0$ ,  $\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t > 0$ .

$\beta^l = \min_{t \in [0, w]} \beta(t)$ ,  $m^l = \min_{t \in [0, w]} m(t)$ ,  $\beta^u = \max_{t \in [0, w]} \beta(t)$ ,  $m^u = \max_{t \in [0, w]} m(t)$ ,  $m(t) > 0$  and  $c(t), f(t) > 0$ ,  $b(t), \alpha(t) \geq 0$ ,  $\beta(t) > 0$ . Each coefficient functions are from  $C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .

**Lemma 3.2.1** *If*

$$\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) < 0 \text{ and } - \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q r_i + \int_0^w \frac{f(t)}{\beta(t)} \Delta t < 0,$$

*then all positive solutions  $(\exp(x(t)), \exp(y(t)))$  are tends to 0 as  $t$  tends to infinity.*

**Proof.** If we using the first equation of (3.1) we obtain,

$$\exp(x(t)) \leq \exp(x(0)) \prod_{ti < t} (1 + g_i) \exp\left(\int_0^t a(s)\Delta s\right)$$

Since  $\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) < 0$ . Hence  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \exp(x(t)) = 0$

Similarly  $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} \exp(y(t)) = 0$ .

□

**Theorem 3.2.1** *In addition to conditions on coefficient functions if*

$$\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) - \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t > 0$$

*and*

$$\left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) - \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t} \right) \exp \left[ - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \right) \right] \cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i))) - \alpha^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)) > 0$$

*then there exist at least a  $w$ -periodic solution.*

**Proof.**

$$X := \left\{ \left[ \begin{array}{c} p \\ z \end{array} \right] \in C_{prd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R}^2) : p(t + w) = p(t), z(t + w) = z(t) \right\} \text{ with the norm:}$$

$$\left\| \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right\| = \sup_{t \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}} (|p(t)|, |z(t)|) \text{ and}$$

$$Y := \left\{ \left[ \begin{bmatrix} p \\ s \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ f_1 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} d_q \\ f_q \end{bmatrix} \right] \in C_{prd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R}^2) \times (\mathbb{R}^2)^q, p(t+w) = p(t), z(t+w) = z(t) \right\} \text{ with}$$

the norm:

$$\left\| \left[ \begin{bmatrix} p \\ s \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ f_1 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} d_q \\ f_q \end{bmatrix} \right] \right\| = \sup_{t \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}} \left( \left\| \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right\|, \left\| \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ f_1 \end{bmatrix} \right\|, \dots, \left\| \begin{bmatrix} d_q \\ f_q \end{bmatrix} \right\| \right).$$

Let us define the mappings  $L$  and  $C$  by  $L : DomL \subset X \rightarrow Y$  such that

$$L \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right) = \left( \begin{bmatrix} p^\Delta \\ z^\Delta \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \Delta p(t_1) \\ \Delta z(t_1) \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} \Delta p(t_q) \\ \Delta z(t_q) \end{bmatrix} \right)$$

and  $C : X \rightarrow Y$  such that

$$C \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right) = \left( \begin{bmatrix} a(t) - b(t) \exp(p(t)) - \frac{c(t) \exp(z(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t) \exp(p(t)) + m(t) \exp(z(t))} \\ -d(t) + \frac{f(t) \exp(p(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t) \exp(p(t)) + m(t) \exp(z(t))} \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \ln(1 + g_1) \\ \ln(p_1) \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} \ln(1 + g_q) \\ \ln(p_q) \end{bmatrix} \right).$$

$$\text{Then } KerL = \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} : \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} c_1 \\ c_2 \end{bmatrix} \right\}, c_1 \text{ and } c_2 \text{ are constants.}$$

$$ImL = \left\{ \left[ \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ f_1 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} d_q \\ f_q \end{bmatrix} \right] : \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w p(s) \Delta s + \sum_{i=1}^q d_i \\ \int_0^w z(s) \Delta s + \sum_{i=1}^q f_i \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right\}.$$

$ImL$  is closed in  $Y$  and  $dimKerL = codimImL = 2$ . We can show this as follows.

It is obvious that summation of any element from  $ImL$  and  $KerL$  is in  $Y$ . WLOG

take  $p \in Y$  and  $\int_{\kappa}^{w+\kappa} p(t) \Delta t + \sum_{i=1}^q d_i = I \neq 0$ . Let us define a new function

$g = p - \frac{I}{mes(w)}$ , where  $mes(t) = \int_{\kappa}^{\kappa+t} 1 \Delta t$ . Then  $\frac{I}{mes(w)}$  is constant because  $\forall \kappa$ ,  $\int_{\kappa}^{w+\kappa} p(t) \Delta t$  is always same by the definition of periodic time scales and the impulses are constant and there are same number of impulses in the interval  $[\kappa, w + \kappa]$ ,  $\forall \kappa$ . If

we take the integral of  $g$  from  $\kappa$  to  $w + \kappa$ , we get

$$\int_{\kappa}^{w+\kappa} g(t)\Delta t + \sum_{i=1}^q d_i = \int_{\kappa}^{w+\kappa} p(t)\Delta t + \sum_{i=1}^q d_i - I = 0.$$

Then  $p \in Y$  can be written as the summation of  $g \in ImL$  and  $\frac{I}{mes(w)} \in KerL$ . Since  $\frac{I}{mes(w)}$  is constant. Similar steps are used for  $z$ .  $\begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \in Y$  can be written as the summation of an element from  $ImL$  and an element from  $KerL$ . Also it is easy to show that any element in  $Y$  is uniquely expressed as the summation of an element  $KerL$  and an element from  $ImL$ . So  $codimImL$  is also 2, we get the desired result. Therefore  $L$  is a Fredholm mapping of index zero.

There exist continuous projectors  $U : X \rightarrow X$  and  $V : Y \rightarrow Y$  such that

$$U \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right) = \frac{1}{mes(w)} \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w p(s)\Delta s \\ \int_0^w z(s)\Delta s \end{bmatrix}$$

and

$$V \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ f_1 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} d_q \\ f_q \end{bmatrix} \right) = \frac{1}{mes(w)} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w p(s)\Delta s + \sum_{i=1}^q d_i \\ \int_0^w z(s)\Delta s + \sum_{i=1}^q f_i \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right).$$

The generalized inverse  $K_U = ImL \rightarrow DomL \subset KerP$  is given,

$$K_U \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ f_1 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} d_q \\ f_q \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^t p(s)\Delta s + \sum_{t>t_i} d_i - \frac{1}{mes(w)} \int_0^w \int_0^t p(s)\Delta s\Delta t - \sum_{i=1}^q d_i + \frac{1}{mes(w)} \sum_{i=1}^q d_i mes(t_i) \\ \int_0^t z(s)\Delta s + \sum_{t>t_i} f_i - \frac{1}{mes(w)} \int_0^w \int_0^t z(s)\Delta s\Delta t - \sum_{i=1}^q f_i + \frac{1}{mes(w)} \sum_{i=1}^q f_i mes(t_i) \end{bmatrix}.$$

$$V C \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right) =$$

$$\frac{1}{mes(w)} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w a(s) - b(s)exp(p(s)) - \frac{c(s)exp(z(s))}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)exp(p(s))+m(s)exp(z(s))} \Delta s + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \\ \int_0^w -d(s) + \frac{f(s)exp(p(s))}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)exp(p(s))+m(s)exp(z(s))} \Delta s + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right).$$

Let

$$a(t) - b(t)exp(p(t)) - \frac{c(t)exp(z(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)exp(p(t)) + m(t)exp(z(t))} = C_1,$$

$$-d(t) + \frac{f(t)exp(p(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)exp(p(t)) + m(t)exp(z(t))} = C_2,$$

$$\frac{1}{mes(w)} \int_0^w a(s) - b(s)exp(p(s)) - \frac{c(s)exp(z(s))}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s)exp(p(s)) + m(s)exp(z(s))} \Delta s = \bar{C}_1,$$

and

$$\frac{1}{mes(w)} \int_0^w -d(s) + \frac{f(s)exp(p(s))}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s)exp(p(s)) + m(s)exp(z(s))} \Delta s = \bar{C}_2.$$

$$K_U(I - V)C \left( \begin{bmatrix} p \\ z \end{bmatrix} \right) = K_U \left( \begin{bmatrix} C_1 - \bar{C}_1 \\ C_2 - \bar{C}_2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} \ln(1 + g_1) \\ \ln(p_1) \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} \ln(1 + g_q) \\ \ln(p_q) \end{bmatrix} \right)$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^t C_1(s) - \bar{C}_1(s) \Delta s + \ln \prod_{t > t_i} (1 + g_i) \\ -\frac{1}{mes(w)} \int_0^w \int_0^t C_1(s) - \bar{C}_1(s) \Delta s \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) + \frac{1}{mes(w)} \sum_{i=1}^q \ln(1 + g_i) t_i \\ \int_0^t C_2(s) - \bar{C}_2(s) \Delta s + \ln \prod_{t > t_i} r_i \\ -\frac{1}{mes(w)} \int_0^w \int_0^t C_2(s) - \bar{C}_2(s) \Delta s \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q r_i + \frac{1}{mes(w)} \sum_{i=1}^q \ln(r_i) t_i \end{bmatrix}.$$

Clearly,  $VC$  and  $K_U(I - V)C$  are continuous. Since  $X$  and  $Y$  are Banach spaces, then by using Arzela-Ascoli theorem we can find  $K_U(I - V)C(\bar{\Omega})$  is compact for any open bounded set  $\Omega \subset X$ . Additionally,  $VC(\bar{\Omega})$  is bounded. Thus,  $C$  is L-compact on  $\bar{\Omega}$  with any open bounded set  $\Omega \subset X$ .

To apply the continuation theorem we investigate the below operator equation.

$$\begin{aligned} x^\Delta(t) &= \lambda \left[ a(t) - b(t)exp(x(t)) - \frac{c(t)exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)exp(x(t)) + m(t)exp(y(t))} \right], t \neq t_k \\ y^\Delta(t) &= \lambda \left[ -d(t) + \frac{f(t)exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)exp(x(t)) + m(t)exp(y(t))} \right], t \neq t_k \end{aligned} \quad (3.2)$$

$$\Delta x(t_k) = \lambda \ln(1 + g_k)$$

$$\Delta y(t_k) = \lambda \ln(r_k)$$

Let  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in X$  be any solution of system (3.2). If we integrate both sides of system (3.2) over the interval  $[0, w]$  then we have,

$$\begin{cases} \int_0^w a(t) \Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) = \int_0^w b(t)exp(x(t)) + \frac{c(t)exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)exp(x(t)) + m(t)exp(y(t))} \Delta t & , \\ \int_0^w d(t) \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) = \int_0^w \frac{f(t)exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)exp(x(t)) + m(t)exp(y(t))} \Delta t & , \end{cases} \quad (3.3)$$

Using (3.2) and (3.3) we obtain,

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_0^w |x^\Delta(t)|\Delta t &\leq \lambda \left[ \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w b(t)\exp(x(t)) + \frac{c(t)\exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))}\Delta t \right], \\
&\leq \lambda \left[ \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right] \\
&\leq M_1;
\end{aligned} \tag{3.4}$$

where  $M_1 := \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)$ .

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_0^w |y^\Delta(t)|\Delta t &\leq \lambda \left[ \int_0^w |d(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))}\Delta t \right] \\
&\leq \lambda \left[ \int_0^w |d(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q r_i \right] \\
&\leq M_2;
\end{aligned} \tag{3.5}$$

where  $M_2 := \int_0^w |d(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q r_i$

Since  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in X$  and there are  $q$  impulses which are constant, then there exist  $\eta_i, \xi_i, i = 1, 2$  such that

$$\begin{aligned}
x(\xi_1) &= \min\{inf_{t \in [0, t_1]} x(t), inf_{t \in (t_1, t_2]} x(t), \dots, inf_{t \in (t_q, w]} x(t)\} \\
x(\eta_1) &= \max\{sup_{t \in [0, t_1]} x(t), sup_{t \in (t_1, t_2]} x(t), \dots, sup_{t \in (t_q, w]} x(t)\}
\end{aligned} \tag{3.6}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
y(\xi_2) &= \min\{inf_{t \in [0, t_1]} y(t), inf_{t \in (t_1, t_2]} y(t), \dots, inf_{t \in (t_q, w]} y(t)\} \\
y(\eta_2) &= \max\{sup_{t \in [0, t_1]} y(t), sup_{t \in (t_1, t_2]} y(t), \dots, sup_{t \in (t_q, w]} y(t)\}
\end{aligned} \tag{3.7}$$

By the second equation of (3.3) and (3.6) and the first assumption of Theorem 3.2.1, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) &\leq \int_0^w \left[ b(t)\exp(x(\eta_1)) + \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \right] \Delta t \\
&= \exp(x(\eta_1)) \int_0^w b(t)\Delta t + \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t
\end{aligned}$$

and  $x(\eta_1) \geq l_1$ ; where  $l_1 := \ln \left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) - \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t} \right)$ .

using the second inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 we have

$$\begin{aligned}
x(t) &\geq x(\eta_1) - \int_0^w |x^\Delta(t)|\Delta t \geq x(\eta_1) - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \\
&\geq H_1 := l_1 - M_1.
\end{aligned} \tag{3.8}$$

By the first equation of (3.3) and (3.6) we get

$$x(\xi_1) \leq l_2, \text{ where } l_2 := \ln \left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t} \right).$$

using the first inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 we have

$$\begin{aligned} x(t) \leq x(\xi_1) + \int_0^w |x^\Delta(t)|\Delta t &\leq x(\xi_1) + \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \\ &\leq H_2 := l_2 + M_1. \end{aligned} \quad (3.9)$$

By (3.8) and (3.9)  $\max_{t \in [0, w]} |x(t)| \leq B_1 := \max\{|H_1|, |H_2|\}$ . Using (3.9), second equation of (3.3) and first equation of (3.7), we can derive that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) &\leq \int_0^w \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\beta^l \exp(x(t)) + m^l \exp(y(t))} \Delta t \leq \int_0^w \frac{f(t)e^{H_2}}{\beta^l e^{H_2} + m^l \exp(y(\xi_2))} \Delta t \\ &= \frac{e^{H_2}}{\beta^l e^{H_2} + m^l \exp(y(\xi_2))} \int_0^w f(t)\Delta t \end{aligned}$$

Therefore

$$\exp(y(\xi_2)) \leq \frac{1}{m^l} \left( \frac{e^{H_2} \int_0^w f(t)\Delta t}{\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)} - \beta^l e^{H_2} \right)$$

By the assumption of the Theorem 3.2.1 we can show that

$$\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^l (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)) > 0 \text{ and } y(\xi_2) \leq L_1$$

$$\text{where } L_1 := \ln \left( \frac{1}{m^l} \left( \frac{e^{H_2} \int_0^w f(t)\Delta t}{\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)} - \beta^l e^{H_2} \right) \right).$$

Hence, by using the first inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 and the second equation of (3.3),

$$\begin{aligned} y(t) \leq y(\xi_2) + \int_0^w |y^\Delta(t)|\Delta t &\leq y(\xi_2) + \left( \int_0^w |d(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \right) \\ &\leq H_3 := L_1 + M_2. \end{aligned} \quad (3.10)$$

Again by using the second equation of (3.3) we can derive,

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) &\geq \int_0^w \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \exp(x(t)) + m^u \exp(y(t))} \Delta t \\ &\geq \int_0^w \frac{f(t)e^{H_1}}{\alpha^u + \beta^u e^{H_1} + m^u \exp(y(\eta_2))} \Delta t \\ &= \frac{e^{H_1}}{\alpha^u + \beta^u e^{H_1} + m^u \exp(y(\eta_2))} \int_0^w f(t)\Delta t \end{aligned}$$

$$\exp(y(\eta_2)) \geq \frac{1}{m^u} \left( \frac{e^{H_1} \int_0^w f(t) \Delta t}{\int_0^w d(t) \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)} - \beta^u e^{H_1} - \alpha^u \right).$$

Again using second assumption of Theorem 3.2.1 we obtain

$$e^{H_1} \left( \int_0^w f(t) \Delta t - \beta^u \left( \int_0^w d(t) \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \right) \right) - \alpha^u \left( \int_0^w d(t) \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \right) > 0$$

$$\text{and } y(\eta_2) \geq L_2 \text{ where } L_2 := \ln \left( \frac{1}{m^u} \left( \frac{e^{H_1} \int_0^w f(t) \Delta t}{\int_0^w d(t) \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)} - \beta^u e^{H_1} - \alpha^u \right) \right).$$

By using the second inequality in Lemma 3.1.1,

$$\begin{aligned} y(t) &\geq y(\eta_2) - \int_0^w |y^\Delta(t)| \Delta t \\ &\geq y(\eta_2) - \left( \int_0^w |d(t)| \Delta t + \int_0^w d(t) \Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \right) \\ &\geq H_4 := L_2 - M_2. \end{aligned} \quad (3.11)$$

By (3.10) and (3.11) we have  $\max_{t \in [0, w]} |y(t)| \leq B_2 := \max\{|H_3|, |H_4|\}$ . Obviously,  $B_1$  and  $B_2$  are both independent of  $\lambda$ . Let  $M = B_1 + B_2 + 1$ . Then

$$\max_{t \in [0, w]} \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| < M. \text{ Let } \Omega = \left\{ \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| \in X : \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| < M \right\} \text{ and } \Omega$$

verifies the requirement (a) in Theorem 3.1.1. When  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in \text{Ker } L \cap \partial \Omega$ ,  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix}$  is

a constant with  $\left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| = M$ , then

$$\begin{aligned} VC \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) &= \\ &\left( \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w a(s) - b(s) \exp(x) - \frac{c(s) \exp(y)}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s) \exp(x) + m(s) \exp(y)} \Delta s + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \\ \int_0^w -d(s) + \frac{f(s) \exp(x)}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s) \exp(x) + m(s) \exp(y)} \Delta s + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right) \\ &\neq \left( \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} JVC \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) &= \\ &\left[ \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w a(s) - b(s) \exp(x(s)) - \frac{c(s) \exp(y(s))}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s) \exp(x(s)) + m(s) \exp(y(s))} \Delta s + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \\ \int_0^w -d(s) + \frac{f(s) \exp(x(s))}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s) \exp(x(s)) + m(s) \exp(y(s))} \Delta s + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \end{bmatrix} \right], \end{aligned}$$

where  $J : ImV \rightarrow KerL$  such that  $J \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \dots, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix}$ .

Define the homotopy  $H_\nu = \nu(JVC) + (1 - \nu)G$  where

$$G \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} \int_0^w a(s) - b(s)exp(x)\Delta s + ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \\ \int_0^w d(s) - \frac{f(s)exp(x)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)exp(x)+m(s)exp(y)}\Delta s + ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \end{bmatrix}$$

Take  $DJ_G$  as the determinant of the jacobian of  $G$ . Since  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in KerL$ , then jacobian of  $G$  is

$$\begin{bmatrix} -e^x \int_0^w b(s)\Delta s & 0 \\ \int_0^w \frac{-e^x f(s)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)e^x+m(s)e^y}\Delta s + \int_0^w \frac{(e^x)^2 f(s)\beta(s)}{(\alpha(s)+\beta(s)e^x+m(s)e^y)^2}\Delta s & - \int_0^w \frac{e^x e^y f(s)m(s)}{(\alpha(s)+\beta(s)e^x+m(s)e^y)^2}\Delta s \end{bmatrix}.$$

All the functions in jacobian of  $G$  is positive then  $signDJ_G$  is always positive. Hence

$$deg(JC, \Omega \cap KerL, 0) = deg(G, \Omega \cap KerL, 0) = \sum_{\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in G^{-1} \left( \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right)} signDJ_G \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) \neq 0.$$

Thus all the conditions of Theorem 3.1.1 are satisfied. Therefore system (3.1) has at least a positive  $w$ -periodic solution.  $\square$

**Corollary 3.2.1** *If  $\alpha(t) = 0$  in the system (3.1),*

$$\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) - \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{m(t)}\Delta t > 0 \text{ and}$$

$\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)) > 0$  is satisfied then the system (3.1) has at least one  $w$ -periodic solution.

**Theorem 3.2.2** *If same conditions are valid for the coefficient functions in system (3.1); except  $\alpha(t)$  where  $\alpha(t) > 0$  and*

$$\left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t} \right) exp \left[ - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \right) \right] \cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i))) - \alpha^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)) > 0$$

is satisfied then there exist at least a  $w$ -periodic solution.

**Proof.** First part of the proof is very similar with the proof of Theorem 3.2.1. By (3.2), (3.3) and (3.6)

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) &= \int_0^w \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))} \Delta t \\ &\leq \exp(x(\eta_1)) \int_0^w \frac{f(t)}{\alpha(t)} \Delta t \end{aligned}$$

By (3.3)  $\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) > 0$ . Also by the assumption of Theorem 3.2.2  $f(t), \alpha(t) > 0$ . Then we get  $x(\eta_1) \geq \tilde{l}_1$ ,  $\tilde{l}_1 := \ln \left( \frac{\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)}{\int_0^w f(t)/\alpha(t)\Delta t} \right)$ .

and using the second inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 we have

$$\begin{aligned} x(t) &\geq x(\eta_1) - \int_0^w |x^\Delta(t)|\Delta t \\ &\geq x(\eta_1) - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \\ &= \tilde{H}_1 := \tilde{l}_1 - \tilde{M}_1. \end{aligned} \quad (3.12)$$

By the first equation of (3.3) and (3.6)

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) &\geq \int_0^w b(t)\exp(x(\xi_1))\Delta t \\ &= \exp(x(\xi_1)) \int_0^w b(t)\Delta t \end{aligned}$$

Then we get  $x(\xi_1) \leq \tilde{l}_2$  where  $\tilde{l}_2 := \ln \left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t} \right)$ .

Using the first inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 we have

$$\begin{aligned} x(t) &\leq x(\xi_1) + \int_0^w |x^\Delta(t)|\Delta t \\ &\leq x(\xi_1) + \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \\ &\leq \tilde{H}_2 := \tilde{l}_2 + \tilde{M}_1. \end{aligned} \quad (3.13)$$

By (3.12) and (3.13)  $\max_{t \in [0, w]} |x(t)| \leq \tilde{B}_1 := \max\{|\tilde{H}_1|, |\tilde{H}_2|\}$ . From the second equation of (3.3) and the second equation of (3.7), we can derive that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) &\leq \int_0^w \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{m(t)\exp(y(t))} \Delta t \\ &\leq \int_0^w \frac{f(t)e^{\tilde{H}_2}}{m(t)\exp(y(\xi_2))} \Delta t \\ &= \frac{e^{\tilde{H}_2}}{\exp(y(\xi_2))} \int_0^w f(t)/m(t)\Delta t. \end{aligned}$$

Therefore

$$\exp(y(\xi_2)) \leq e^{\tilde{H}_2} \left( \frac{\int_0^w f(t)/m(t)\Delta t}{\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)} \right)$$

Since  $e^{\tilde{H}_2}, f(t), m(t) > 0$ , then  $y(\xi_2) \leq \tilde{L}_1$

where  $\tilde{L}_1 := \ln \left( e^{\tilde{H}_2} \left( \frac{\int_0^w f(t)/m(t)\Delta t}{\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)} \right) \right)$ .

Hence, by using the first inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 and the second equation of (3.3),

$$\begin{aligned} y(t) &\leq y(\xi_2) + \int_0^w |y^\Delta(t)|\Delta t \\ &\leq y(\xi_2) + \left( \int_0^w |d(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \right) \\ &\leq \tilde{H}_3 := \tilde{L}_1 + \tilde{M}_2. \end{aligned} \quad (3.14)$$

By the assumption of Theorem 3.2.2 there exists  $n_0$  such that  $\forall n \geq n_0$

$$\begin{aligned} &\left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t + 1/n \int_0^w c(t)/\alpha(t)\Delta t} \right) \exp \left[ - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \right] \\ &\cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i))) - \alpha^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)) > 0 \end{aligned}$$

is true. We need to get  $\tilde{H}_4$  such that  $\forall t \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}} y(t) \geq \tilde{H}_4$ . Let us assume there exists  $t, s \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}$  such that  $y(s) \geq x(t) - \ln(n_0)$ . Then by using (3.6) and (3.7) we obtain

$$y(\eta_2) \geq y(s) \geq x(t) - \ln(n_0) \geq x(\xi_1) - \ln(n_0) \geq \tilde{H}_1 - \ln(n_0) := M_4^1.$$

If there does not exist such  $t, s$  then  $\forall t, s \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}, y(s) < x(t) - \ln(n_0)$ . Also from the first equation of (3.3), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) &\leq \exp(x(\eta_1)) \int_0^w b(t)\Delta t + \exp(y(\eta_2)) \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{\alpha(t)} \Delta t \\ &\leq \exp(x(\eta_1)) \left( \int_0^w b(t)\Delta t + (1/n_0) \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{\alpha(t)} \Delta t \right). \end{aligned}$$

By using first inequality in Lemma 3.1.1, we have  $\exp(x(t)) \geq K$ , where

$$K := \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)}{\left( \int_0^w b(t)\Delta t + (1/n_0) \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{\alpha(t)} \Delta t \right)} \exp \left( - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \right).$$

Using the second equality in (3.3) and the assumption of the Theorem 3.2.2, we obtain

$$\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \geq \frac{K}{\alpha^u + \beta^u K + m^u \exp(y(\eta_2))} \int_0^w f(t)\Delta t.$$

This implies  $y(\eta_2) \geq M_4^2$ , where

$$\begin{aligned} M_4^2 := \ln \left[ \left( \frac{\int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i)}{\int_0^w b(t)\Delta t + (1/n_0) \int_0^w \frac{c(t)}{\alpha(t)} \Delta t} \right) \exp \left[ - \left( \int_0^w |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w a(t)\Delta t + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1+g_i) \right) \right] \right. \\ \left. \cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i))) - \alpha^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i)) \right] \\ - \ln(m^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i))). \end{aligned}$$

Thus, according what we have done above  $y(\eta_2) \geq M_4 := \min\{M_4^1, M_4^2\}$ . Using second inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 we have  $y(t) \leq \tilde{H}_4$  where

$$\tilde{H}_4 := M_4 - \left( \int_0^w |d(t)|\Delta t + \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t - \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \right).$$

Thus  $\max_{t \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}} |y(t)| \leq \tilde{B}_2 := \max\{|\tilde{H}_3|, |\tilde{H}_4|\}$ . Obviously,  $\tilde{B}_1$  and  $\tilde{B}_2$  are both independent of  $\lambda$ . Let  $M = \tilde{B}_1 + \tilde{B}_2 + 1$ . Then  $\max_{t \in [0, w]} \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| < M$ . Let

$$\Omega = \left\{ \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| \in X : \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| < M \right\}$$

then  $\Omega$  verifies the requirement (a) in Theorem 3.1.1. Rest of the proof is similar to Theorem 3.2.1.  $\square$

By using the informations from [10] and [50] we give the model of the example as follows:

Let there are two insect populations, one of them is the predator, the other one is the prey. While in a season, for instance during the six warm months of the year both insects has a continuous life cycle and they die out in winter, while their eggs are incubating or dormant, and then they both hatch in a new season and both of them giving rise to non-overlapping populations. This situation can be modeled using the time scale

$$\mathbb{T} = \bigcup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} [2k, 2k + 1], \quad \text{with } w = 2$$

Here impulsive effect of the pest population density is after its partial destruction by catching, poisoning with chemicals used in agriculture and some other negative effects of environment on the prey (can be shown by  $-1 < g_k < 0$ ) and impulsive increase of the predator population density is by artificially breeding the species or releasing some species ( $r_k > 0$ ). In addition to these, if the model assumes a Beddington–DeAngelis functional response as in (3.1) and if the assumptions in Theorem 3.2.1 are satisfied then there exists a 2-periodic solution of (3.1).

**Example 3.2.1**  $\mathbb{T} = [2k, 2k + 1]$ ,  $k \in \mathbb{N}$   $k$  start with 0.

$$x^\Delta(t) = (0.2\sin(2\pi t) + 0.3) - (0.2\sin(2\pi t) + 0.2)\exp(x) - \frac{(0.1+0.1\cos(2\pi t))\exp(y)}{(0.5\sin(2\pi t)+0.7)+(1+0.5\cos(2\pi t))\exp(x)+\exp(y)},$$

$$y^\Delta(t) = -(0.3\sin(2\pi t) + 1) + \frac{(4\cos(2\pi t)+6.5)\exp(x)}{(0.5\sin(2\pi t)+0.7)+(1+0.5\cos(2\pi t))\exp(x)+\exp(y)}, t \neq t_k$$

$$\Delta x(t_k) = \ln(1 + g_k)$$

$$\Delta y(t_k) = \ln(r_k)$$

Impulse points:  $t_1 = 2k + 1/4$ ,  $t_2 = 2k + 3/4$  and  $q = 2$ .

$$g_1 = e^{-0.01} - 1, g_2 = e^{-0.01} - 1$$

$$p_1 = e^{0.1}, p_2 = e^{0.1}$$

Example 3.2.1 satisfies all the conditions of Theorem 3.2.1, thus it has at least one periodic solution.

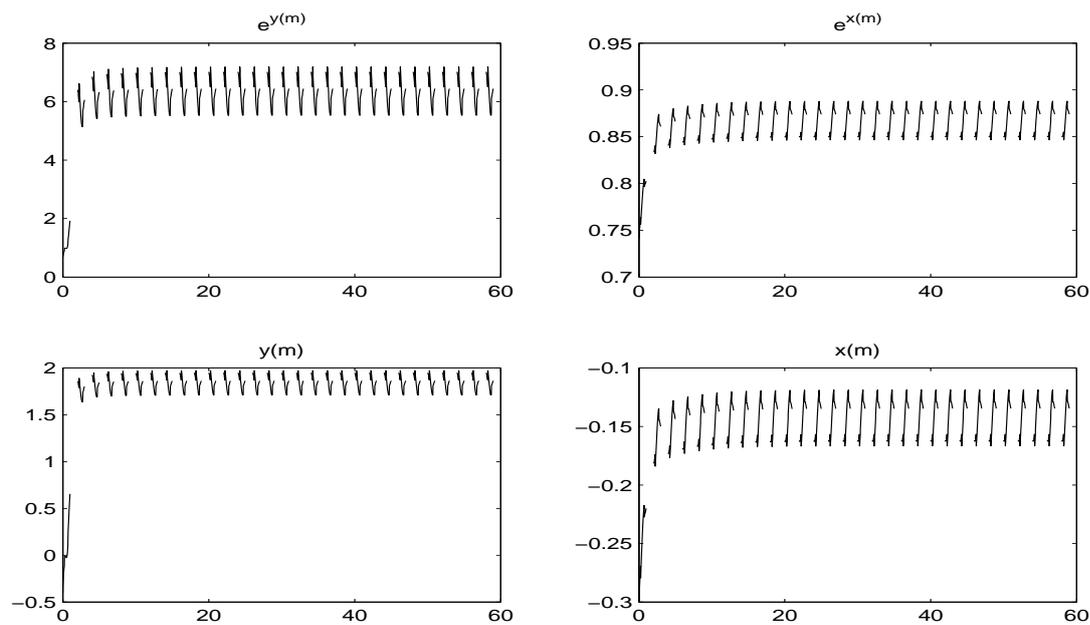


Figure 3.1: Numeric solution of Example 3.2.1 shows the periodicity.

**Example 3.2.2**  $\mathbb{T} = [2k, 2k + 1]$ ,  $k \in \mathbb{N}$   $k$  start with 0.

$$x^\Delta(t) = (0.2\sin(2\pi t) + 0.3) - (0.1\sin(2\pi t) + 0.2)\exp(x) - \frac{(2+\cos(2\pi t))\exp(y)}{(\sin(2\pi t)+2)+(1+0.5\cos(2\pi t))\exp(x)+4\exp(y)},$$

$$y^\Delta(t) = -(0.3\sin(2\pi t) + 1) + \frac{(4\cos(2\pi t)+6.5)\exp(x)}{(\sin(2\pi t)+2)+(1+0.5\cos(2\pi t))\exp(x)+4\exp(y)}, t \neq t_k$$

$$\Delta x(t_k) = \ln(1 + g_k)$$

$$\Delta y(t_k) = \ln(r_k)$$

*Impulse points:*  $t_1 = 2k + 1/4$ ,  $t_2 = 2k + 3/4$  and  $q = 2$ .

$$g_1 = e^{-0.01} - 1, g_2 = e^{-0.01} - 1$$

$$p_1 = e^{0.1}, p_2 = e^{0.1}$$

*Example 3.2.2 satisfies all the conditions of Theorem 3.2.2, thus it has at least one periodic solution.*

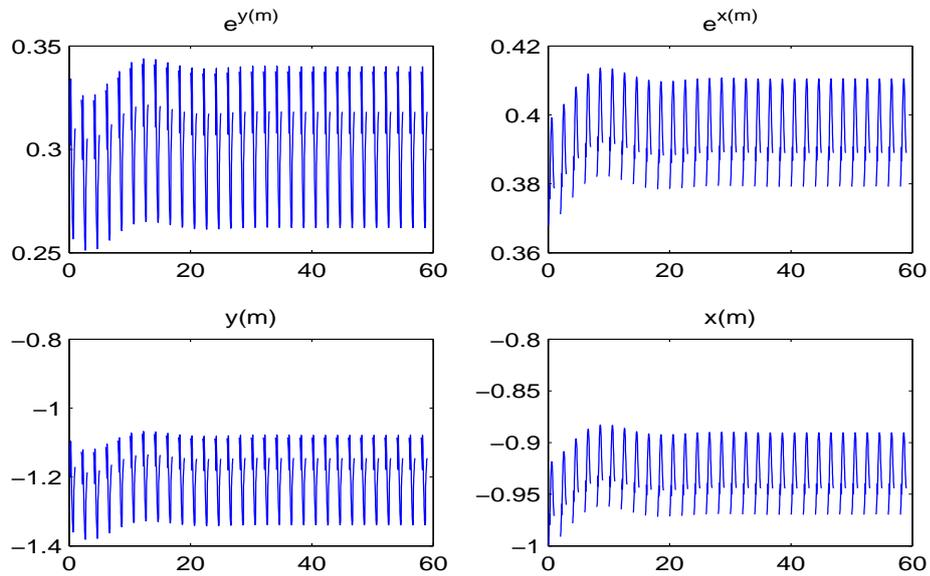


Figure 3.2: Numeric solution of Example 3.2.2 shows the periodicity.

**Definition 3.2.1** [12] Let  $\Omega$  be a nonempty open subset of  $\mathbb{R}$ , then the function  $f$  is said to be Lipschitz continuous with respect to the first variable if  $x \in \Omega$  and if for every  $a, b \in \mathbb{T}$  such that  $a < b$  and  $L \geq 0$  such that

$$\|f(x_1, t) - f(x_2, t)\| \leq L\|x_1 - x_2\|,$$

for all  $x_1, x_2 \in \Omega$  and for all  $t \in [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$ .

**Lemma 3.2.2** Let  $x(t), u(t) \in C_{rd}^1(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ . Consider the following inequality and equation  $x^\Delta(t) \leq (\geq) f(t, x(t)), u^\Delta(t) = f(t, u(t))$  if  $u(t_0) \geq (\leq) x(t_0)$  and  $f(t, v(t))$  is Lipschitz continuous with respect to  $v(t)$ , then  $x(t) \leq (\geq) u(t)$ .

**Proof.** By contradiction, we get the result. If  $x(T) > (<) u(T)$  for some  $T > t_0$ , then set

$$t_1 = \sup\{t : t_0 \leq t < T \text{ and } x(t) \leq (\geq) u(t)\}.$$

Then  $t_0 \leq t_1 < T$ ,  $x(t_1) \leq (\geq) u(t_1)$ , and  $x(t) > (<) u(t)$  for  $t > t_1$ .

For  $t_1 \leq t \leq T$ ,  $|x(t) - u(t)| = x(t) - u(t), (|u(t) - x(t)| = u(t) - x(t))$  so we have

$$(x - u)^\Delta(t) \leq f(t, x) - f(t, u) \leq |L||x - u| = |L|(x - u).$$

$$((u - x)^\Delta(t) \leq f(t, u) - f(t, x) \leq |L||u - x| = |L|(u - x)).$$

By Gronwall's inequality [2] (applied to  $x - u$  on  $[t_1, T]$ , with  $(x - u)(t_1) \leq 0$ ),  $(x - u)(t) \leq 0$  on  $[t_1, T]$ , since  $e_{|L|}(t_1, t) > 0$ .

(By Gronwall's inequality [2] (applied to  $u - x$  on  $[t_1, T]$ , with  $(u - x)(t_1) \leq 0$ ),  $(u - x)(t) \leq 0$  on  $[t_1, T]$ , since  $e_{|L|}(t_1, t) > 0$ .)

Hence there is a contradiction. □

**Lemma 3.2.3** Consider the below equations

$$x^\Delta(t) \leq (\geq) a(t) - b(t)\exp(x(t)), \quad t \neq t_k$$

$$\Delta x(t_k) = \ln(1 + g_k)$$

$$u^\Delta(t) = a(t) - b(t)\exp(u(t)), \quad t \neq t_k$$

$$\Delta u(t_k) = \ln(1 + g_k)$$

If  $u(t_0) \geq x(t_0)$ , then  $x(t) \leq (\geq) u(t)$ .

**Proof.** By using induction we try to prove the lemma. First of all since

$x^\Delta(t), u^\Delta(t) \leq a(t)$ , then the solutions  $x(t), u(t)$  are bounded on a bounded interval. therefore on the interval  $[0, t_1]_{\mathbb{T}}$  exp function becomes Lipschitz continuous and since  $b(t)$  is periodic we can apply Lemma 3.2.2. Then  $u(t) \geq x(t)$  on  $[0, t_1]_{\mathbb{T}}$ .

Thus  $u(t_1) + \ln(1 + g_1) \geq x(t_1) + \ln(1 + g_1)$ . Similarly in the interval  $[t_1, t_2]_{\mathbb{T}}$  since  $u(t_1+) \geq x(t_1+)$ , then  $u(t) \geq x(t)$  on  $[t_1, t_2]_{\mathbb{T}}$ .

Therefore  $u(t_2) + \ln(1 + g_2) \geq x(t_2) + \ln(1 + g_2)$ . Equivalently,  $u(t_2+) \geq x(t_2+)$ . Let us also assume that  $u(t) \geq x(t)$  is true on  $[t_{n-1}, t_n]_{\mathbb{T}}$ . Then

$u(t_n) + \ln(1 + g_n) \geq x(t_n) + \ln(1 + g_n)$ , In other words  $u(t_n+) \geq x(t_n+)$  by the Lemma 3.2.2  $u(t) \geq x(t)$  on  $[t_n, t_{n+1}]_{\mathbb{T}}$ . Hence  $u(t) \geq x(t)$  on  $\mathbb{T}$ . Other part is similar.

□

**Lemma 3.2.4** If  $\int_0^w a(s) - \frac{c(s)}{m(s)} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \geq 0$ ,

$-\int_0^w d(s) ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) \geq 0$ ,  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{R}$  then all solutions  $y(t)$  are bounded below,  $x(t)$  are bounded above and below.

**Proof.** By the first equality of (3.1), we have

$$\begin{aligned} x'(t) &\leq a(t) - b(t)\exp(x(t)), \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta x(t_k) &= \ln(1 + g_k) \end{aligned}$$

Then by Lemma 3.2.3  $x(t) \leq u(t)$ . Since  $\int_0^w a(s) ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) > 0$ , then  $u(t)$  is a periodic solution by Theorem 3.2.1 which is globally attractive by Lemma 2.2 in [50]. Hence  $x(t)$  is bounded above.

By the first equality of (3.1) , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} x' &\geq a(t) - \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} - b(t)\exp(x(t)), \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta x(t_k) &= \ln(1 + g_k) \end{aligned}$$

Consider the below equality

$$\tilde{u}'(t) = a(t) - \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} - b(t)\exp(\tilde{u}(t)), \quad t \neq t_k$$

$$\Delta \tilde{u}(t_k) = \ln(1 + g_k)$$

By Lemma 3.2.3  $x(t) \geq \tilde{u}(t)$  and since  $\int_0^w a(s) - \frac{c(s)}{m(s)} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \geq 0$ , then  $\tilde{u}(t)$  has a periodic solution which is globally attractive by Lemma 2.2 in [50], then  $x(t)$  is bounded below.

By the second equality of (3.1), we have

$$\begin{aligned} y'(t) &\geq -d(t), \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta y(t_k) &= \ln r_k \end{aligned}$$

Then

$$y(t) \geq y(0) - \int_0^t d(s) ds + \ln \prod_{0 < t_k < t} r_k \geq y(0).$$

Hence  $y(t)$  is bounded below.

□

**Remark 3.2.1** For any arbitrary  $\mathbb{T}$  if we can find  $u(t)$  in Lemma 3.2.3 is globally attractive, then Lemma 3.2.4 will also be true.

**Lemma 3.2.5** If  $\int_0^w a(s) - \frac{c(s)}{m(s)} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \geq 0$ ,  $0 < r_k \leq 1$  for each  $k$  and  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{R}$  then all solutions  $(\exp(x(t)), \exp(y(t)))$  are bounded above and below.

**Proof.** By Lemma 3.2.4  $\exp(x(t))$  is bounded above and below. By the second equality of (3.1), we have

$$\begin{aligned} y'(t) &\leq \frac{-d(t)\exp(y(t)) + f(t)/m(t)\exp(x(t))}{\exp(y(t))}, \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta y(t_k) &= \ln r_k \end{aligned}$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} [\exp(y(t))] &\leq -d(t)\exp(y(t)) + f(t)/m(t)\exp(x(t)) \\ \exp(y(t_k+)) &= r_k \exp(y(t_k)). \end{aligned}$$

Since  $x(t)$  is bounded above and if  $\exp(x(t)) \leq S_1$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} [\exp(y(t))] &\leq -d(t)\exp(y(t)) + f^u/m^l S_1 \\ \exp(y(t_k+)) &= r_k \exp(y(t_k)). \end{aligned}$$

By [36] Theorem 1.4.1 we have

$$\exp(y(t)) \leq \exp(y(0)) \prod_{0 < t_k < t} r_k \exp\left(\int_0^t -d(s)ds\right) + \int_0^t \prod_{s < t_k < t} r_k \exp\left(\int_s^t -d(\sigma)d\sigma\right) f^u/m^l S_1 ds.$$

At the beginning we assume that  $\int_0^w d(s)ds > 0$  also by [50] Lemma 3.2 since  $r_k \leq 1$  for each  $k$  and taking  $f^u/m^l S_1 = M$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} \exp(y(t)) &\leq \exp(y(0)) \prod_{0 < t_k < t} r_k e^{1+Dw-ct} + M e^{1+Dw} \int_0^t \prod_{s < t_k < t} r_k e^{c(s-t)} ds \\ &\leq \exp(y(0)) \left( e^{1+Dw-ct} + \frac{M e^{1+Dw}}{c} (1 - e^{-ct}) \right) \\ &\leq \exp(y(0)) \left( e^{1+Dw} + \frac{M e^{1+Dw}}{c} \right). \end{aligned}$$

Here  $D = \{|d(t)| : t \in [0, w]\}$  and  $c = \min\{\int_0^w d(s)ds/w, 1/w\}$  therefore apparently  $\exp(y(t))$  is bounded above. Hence  $y(t)$  is bounded above.  $0 \leq \exp(y(t))$ , then  $(\exp(x(t)), \exp(y(t)))$  are bounded above and below.  $\square$

**Lemma 3.2.6** *If  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{R}$ ,  $\int_0^w a(s) - \frac{c(s)}{m(s)} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \geq 0$ ,  $0 < r_k \leq 1$  for each  $k$ , and*

*$-\int_0^w d(s)ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (r_i) + \int_0^w \frac{f(s)s_1}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)s_1+m(s)S_2} ds \geq 0$ , where  $s_1$  is the infimum of the solution*

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{u}' &= a(t) - \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} - b(t)\exp(\tilde{u}(t)), \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta \tilde{u}(t_k) &= \ln(1 + g_k), \end{aligned}$$

*$S_2$  is ln of the supremum of the solution*

$$\begin{aligned} [\exp(v(t))]' &= -d(t)\exp(v(t)) + S_1 f(t)/m(t) \\ \exp(v(t_k+)) &= r_k \exp(v(t_k)), \end{aligned}$$

*and  $S_1$  is exp of the supremum of the solution*

$$\begin{aligned} u' &= a(t) - b(t)\exp(u(t)), \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta u(t_k) &= \ln(1 + g_k), \end{aligned}$$

*then all solutions  $(\exp(x(t)), \exp(y(t)))$  are bounded above and below with positive constants.*

**Proof.** By the second equality of (3.1), we have

$$\begin{aligned} y'(t) &\geq -d(t) + \frac{f(t)s_1}{\alpha(t)+\beta(t)s_1+m(t)S_2}, \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta y(t_k) &= \ln r_k. \end{aligned}$$

Then by assumption

$y(t) \geq y(0) - \int_0^t d(s) + \frac{f(s)s_1}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)s_1+m(s)S_2} ds + \ln \prod_{0 < t_k < t} r_k \geq y(0)$ . Hence  $\exp(y(t))$  is bounded below with a positive constant. By Lemma 3.2.5 we know that  $\exp(y(t))$  is bounded above with a positive constant. Also  $\exp(x(t))$  is bounded above and below with a positive constant.  $\square$

**Remark 3.2.2** From [29] the definition of globally asymptotically stable solution is same with the globally attractive solution.

**Corollary 3.2.2** By [50] Theorem 4.4, if the conditions of Lemma 3.2.6 are satisfied, then solution of system (3.1) is globally asymptotically stable.

**Lemma 3.2.7** If  $\alpha(t) = 0$ ,  $\int_0^w a(s) - \frac{c(s)}{m(s)} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q (1 + g_i) \geq 0$ ,

$$\min_{[0,w]} (-d(t) + f(t)/\beta(t)) \geq 0,$$

$\int_0^w \frac{(-d(s)\beta(s)+f(s))s_1}{\beta(s)s_1+m(s)S_2} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q r_i \geq 0$ , where  $s_1, S_2$  are as in Lemma 3.2.6, for each  $i$   $0 < r_i \leq 1$  and  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{R}$  then all solutions  $(x(t), y(t))$  are bounded above and below.

**Proof.** By the second equality of (3.1), using  $\min_{[0,w]} (-d(t) + f(t)/\beta(t)) \geq 0$ , and by Lemma 3.2.4 since  $x(t)$  bounded above and  $y(t)$  is bounded above (let say  $s_1 \leq x(t) \leq S_1$  and  $y(t) \leq S_2$  and  $s_1, S_1$ , and  $S_2$  is same as in Lemma 3.2.6), we have

$$\begin{aligned} y'(t) &= -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))}, \quad t \neq t_k \\ &= \frac{(-d(t)\beta(t)+f(t))\exp(x(t))-d(t)m(t)\exp(y(t))}{\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))}, \quad t \neq t_k \\ &\geq \frac{(-d(t)\beta(t)+f(t))\exp(x(t))}{\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))} - \frac{d(t)m(t)\exp(y(t))}{\beta(t)\exp(x(t))+m(t)\exp(y(t))}, \quad t \neq t_k \\ &\geq \frac{(-d(t)\beta(t)+f(t))s_1}{\beta(t)s_1+m(t)S_2} - \frac{d(t)m(t)\exp(y(t))}{\beta(t)s_1}, \quad t \neq t_k \end{aligned}$$

$$\Delta y(t_k) = \ln r_k$$

Therefore let us consider the equation

$$\begin{aligned} \check{v}^\Delta(t) &= \frac{(-d(t)\beta(t)+f(t))s_1}{\beta(t)s_1+m(t)S_2} - \frac{d(t)m(t)\exp(\check{v}(t))}{\beta(t)s_1}, \quad t \neq t_k \\ \Delta \check{v}(t_k) &= \ln r_k. \end{aligned}$$

Therefore by Lemma 4  $y(t) \geq \check{v}(t)$  and since

$\int_0^w \frac{(-d(s)\beta(s)+f(s)s_1}{\beta(s)s_1+m(s)S_2} ds + \ln \prod_{i=1}^q r_i \geq 0$ , then  $y(t)$  is bounded below. Other parts are same with Lemma 3.2.4. Hence  $(exp(x(t)), exp(y(t)))$  are bounded above and below with positive constants.  $\square$

**Corollary 3.2.3** *If conditions of Lemma 3.2.7 are satisfied, then automatically Theorem 3.2.1 is satisfied. Also by [50] Theorem 4.4, if the conditions of Lemma 3.2.7 are satisfied, then solution of system (3.1) is globally asymptotically stable which means if the conditions of Lemma 3.2.7 are satisfied then there is a globally asymptotically stable periodic solution.*

**Corollary 3.2.4** *For the non-impulsive case of system (3.1) on  $\mathbb{R}$*

*if  $\alpha(t) = 0$ ,  $\int_0^w a(s) - \frac{c(s)}{m(s)} ds \geq 0$  and*

*$\min_{[0,w]}(-d(t) + f(t)/\beta(t)) \geq 0$ , then there exists a periodic solution which is permanent and globally attractive.*

**Theorem 3.2.3** *If all the coefficient functions in system (3.1) is positive,  $w$ -periodic, from  $C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  and impulses are 0; also*

$$\left(\frac{a^l}{b^u}\right)exp(\mu(a^l - b^u(a^u/b^l(exp(\mu a^u))) - c^u/m^l)) \cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t)) - \alpha^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t) > 0$$

*is satisfied then there exist at least a  $w$ -periodic solution.  $\mu = \sup_{[0,w]_{\mathbb{T}}} \mu(t)$ , for the time scales whose graininess function is bounded over this Time scales.*

**Proof.** First part of the proof is similar to Theorem 3.2.1, only difference is the zero impulses. If the assumption of Theorem 3.2.3 is true then there exists  $n_0$  such that for all  $n \geq n_0$

$$\left(\frac{a^l}{b^u} + (1/n_0)\frac{c^u}{a^l}\right)exp(\mu(a^l - b^u(a^u/b^l(exp(\mu a^u))) - c^u/m^l)) \cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t)) - \alpha^u(\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t) > 0$$

is satisfied. Also let us assume there exist  $s, t \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}$  such that  $y(s) \geq x(t) - \ln(n_0)$ .

Then similar to proof of Theorem 3.2.2 we can find  $\hat{M}_4^1$ .

If such  $s, t$  does not exist, then we have  $y(s) < x(t) - \ln(n_0)$ . Since  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in X$ , then  $x(t)$  has a maximum and a minimum. Therefore by using the first equation of (3.1)

and assuming  $\sigma(\tilde{t})$  is the minimum of  $x(t)$ . We have

$$0 \geq (x(\tilde{t}))^\Delta = a(\tilde{t}) - b(\tilde{t})\exp(x(\tilde{t})) - \frac{c(\tilde{t})\exp(y(\tilde{t}))}{\alpha(\tilde{t}) + \beta(\tilde{t})\exp(x(\tilde{t})) + m(\tilde{t})\exp(y(\tilde{t}))}.$$

Thus we get

$$\begin{aligned} a^l &\leq b^u \exp(x(\tilde{t})) + \frac{c^u \exp(y(\tilde{t}))}{\alpha^l} \\ &\leq (b^u + (1/n_0)c^u/\alpha^l) \exp(x(\tilde{t})). \end{aligned}$$

Then  $\exp(x(\tilde{t})) \geq \frac{a^l}{b^u + (1/n_0)c^u/\alpha^l}$ .

If  $\tilde{t}$  is a right dense point then  $\exp(x(\sigma(\tilde{t}))) \geq \frac{a^l}{b^u + (1/n_0)c^u/\alpha^l}$ . If  $\tilde{t}$  is right scattered, we interested with the maximum of the solution. Let  $\sigma(\hat{t})$  be the maximum of  $x(t)$ .

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &\leq (x(\hat{t}))^\Delta \\ &= a(\hat{t}) - b(\hat{t})\exp(x(\hat{t})) - \frac{c(\hat{t})\exp(y(\hat{t}))}{\alpha(\hat{t}) + \beta(\hat{t})\exp(x(\hat{t})) + m(\hat{t})\exp(y(\hat{t}))} \\ &\leq a^u. \end{aligned}$$

Then  $\exp(x(\hat{t})) \leq a^u/b^l$ . If  $\hat{t} = \sigma(\hat{t})$ , then  $\exp(x(\sigma(\hat{t}))) \leq a^u/b^l$ .

If  $\hat{t} \neq \sigma(\hat{t})$ , then  $\exp(x(\sigma(\hat{t}))) \leq a^u/b^l(\exp(\mu a^u))$ .

Thus

$$\begin{aligned} \exp(x(\sigma(\hat{t}))) &\geq \frac{a^l}{b^u + (1/n_0)c^u/\alpha^l} \exp(\mu(a^l - b^u(a^u/b^l(\exp(\mu a^u))) - c^u/m^l)) \\ &= K_1. \end{aligned}$$

Using (3.3) and (3.7) above results we obtain

$$\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t \geq \frac{K_1}{\alpha^u + \beta^u K_1 + m^u \exp(y(\eta_2))} \int_0^w f(t)\Delta t.$$

This implies

$$\begin{aligned} y(\eta_2) &\geq \ln \left[ \left( \frac{a^l}{b^u + (1/n_0)c^u/\alpha^l} \exp(\mu(a^l - b^u(a^u/b^l(\exp(\mu a^u))) - c^u/m^l)) \right) \right. \\ &\quad \left. \cdot (\int_0^w f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t) - \alpha^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t) \right] - \ln(m^u (\int_0^w d(t)\Delta t)) = \hat{M}_4^2. \end{aligned}$$

According to the above findings we have  $y(\eta_2) \geq \hat{M}_4 = \min\{\hat{M}_4^1, \hat{M}_4^2\}$ . Using second inequality in Lemma 3.1.1 we have  $y(t) \leq \hat{M}_4 - (2 \int_0^w d(t)\Delta t) = \hat{H}_4$ . Thus  $\max_{t \in [0, w]_{\mathbb{T}}} |y(t)| \leq \max\{|\hat{H}_3|, |\hat{H}_4|\}$ . Rest of the proof is similar to Theorem 3.2.1.

□

**Corollary 3.2.5** *In Theorem 3.2.3 if we take  $\mathbb{T}$  as  $\mathbb{R}$  then we get Theorem 3 in [26].*

**Example 3.2.3**  $\mathbb{T} = [2k, 2k + 1]$ ,  $k \in \mathbb{N}$   $k$  start with 0.

$$x^\Delta(t) = (0.1\sin(2\pi t) + 0.2) - (0.1\sin(2\pi t) + 0.25)\exp(x) - \frac{(0.1+0.1\cos(2\pi t))\exp(y)}{(0.2\sin(2\pi t)+0.2)+(1+0.5\cos(2\pi t))\exp(x)+\exp(y)},$$

$$y^\Delta(t) = -(0.3\sin(2\pi t) + 1) + \frac{(4\cos(2\pi t)+6.5)\exp(x)}{(0.2\sin(2\pi t)+0.2)+(1+0.5\cos(2\pi t))\exp(x)+\exp(y)}.$$

Example 3.2.3 satisfies all the conditions of Theorem 4, thus it has at least one periodic solution.

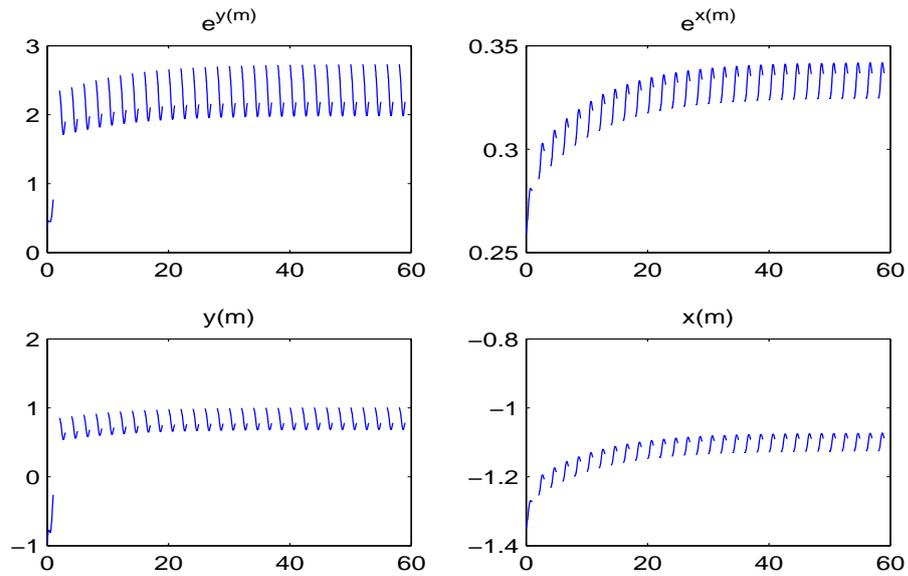


Figure 3.3: Numeric solution of Example 3.2.3 shows the periodicity.



## CHAPTER 4

### BEHAVIOR OF THE SOLUTIONS FOR PREDATOR-PREY DYNAMIC SYSTEMS WITH BEDDINGTON DEANGELIS TYPE FUNCTIONAL RESPONSE ON PERIODIC TIME SCALES IN SHIFTS

#### 4.1 Preliminaries

**Definition 4.1.1** [1] *Let the time scale  $\mathbb{T}$  including a fixed number  $t_0 \in \mathbb{T}^*$  where  $\mathbb{T}^*$  be a non-empty subset of  $\mathbb{T}$ , such that there exist operators  $\delta_{\pm} : [t_0; \infty)_{\mathbb{T}} \times \mathbb{T}^* \rightarrow \mathbb{T}^*$  which satisfies the following properties:*

*P.1 With respect to their second arguments the functions  $\delta_{\pm}$  are strictly increasing, i.e., if*

$$(S_0, v), (S_0, s) \in D_{\pm} := \{(u, v) \in [t_0, \infty)_{\mathbb{T}} \times \mathbb{T}^* : \delta_{\pm}(u, v) \in \mathbb{T}^*\},$$

*then*

*$S_0 \leq v < s$  implies  $\delta_{\pm}(S_0, v) < \delta_{\pm}(S_0, s)$ ,*

*P.2 If  $(S_1, s), (S_2, s) \in D_-$  with  $S_1 < S_2$ , then  $\delta_-(S_1, s) > \delta_-(S_2, s)$ , and if  $(S_1, s), (S_2, s) \in D_+$  with  $S_1 < S_2$ , then  $\delta_+(S_1, s) < \delta_+(S_2, s)$ ,*

*P.3 If  $v \in [t_0; \infty)_{\mathbb{T}}$ , then  $(v, t_0) \in D_+$  and  $\delta_+(v, t_0) = s$ . Moreover, if  $v \in \mathbb{T}^*$ , then  $(t_0, v) \in D_+$  and  $\delta_+(t_0, v) = v$  holds,*

*P.4 If  $(u, v) \in D_{\pm}$ , then  $(u, \delta_{\pm}(u, v)) \in D_{\pm}$  and  $\delta_{\mp}(u; \delta_{\pm}(u, v)) = v$ , respectively,*

P.5 If  $(u, v) \in D_{\pm}$  and  $(s, \delta_{\pm}(u, v)) \in D_{\pm}$ , then  $(u, \delta_{\mp}(s, v)) \in D_{\pm}$  and

$\delta_{\mp}(s, \delta_{\pm}(u, v)) = \delta_{\pm}(u, \delta_{\mp}(s, v))$ , respectively.

Then the backward operator is  $\delta_{-}$  and the forward operator is  $\delta_{+}$  which are associated with  $t_0 \in \mathbb{T}^*$  (called the initial point). Shift size is the variable  $u \in [t_0; \infty)_{\mathbb{T}}$  in  $\delta_{\pm}(u, v)$ . The values  $\delta_{+}(u, v)$  and  $\delta_{-}(u, v)$  in  $\mathbb{T}^*$  indicate  $u$  units translation of the term  $v \in \mathbb{T}^*$  to the right and left, respectively. The sets  $D_{\pm}$  are the domains of the shift operators  $\delta_{\pm}$ , respectively.

**Definition 4.1.2** [1] Let  $\mathbb{T}$  be a time scale with the shift operators  $\delta_{\pm}$  associated with the initial point  $t_0 \in \mathbb{T}^*$ . The time scale  $\mathbb{T}$  is said to be periodic in shifts  $\delta_{\pm}$  if there exists a  $q \in (t_0, \infty)_{\mathbb{T}^*}$  such that  $(q, t) \in D_{\pm}$  for all  $t \in \mathbb{T}^*$ . Furthermore, if

$$Q := \inf\{q \in (t_0, \infty)_{\mathbb{T}^*} : (q, t) \in D_{\pm} \text{ for all } t \in \mathbb{T}^*\} \neq t_0$$

then  $P$  is called the period of the time scale  $\mathbb{T}$ .

**Definition 4.1.3** [1] (Periodic function in shifts  $\delta_{+}$  and  $\delta_{-}$ ). Let  $\mathbb{T}$  be a time scale that is periodic in shifts  $\delta_{+}$  and  $\delta_{-}$  with the period  $Q$ . We say that a real valued function  $g$  defined on  $\mathbb{T}^*$  is periodic in shifts if there exists a  $\tilde{T} \in [Q, \infty)_{\mathbb{T}^*}$  such that

$$g(\delta_{\pm}(\tilde{T}, t)) = g(t).$$

The smallest number  $\tilde{T} \in [Q, \infty)_{\mathbb{T}^*}$  such that is called the period of  $f$ .

Definition 4.1.1, Definition 4.1.2 and Definition 4.1.3 are from [1].

**Notation 1**  $\delta_{+}^2(T, \kappa) = \delta_{+}(T, \delta_{+}(T, \kappa))$ ,

$\delta_{+}^3(T, \kappa) = \delta_{+}(T, \delta_{+}(T, \delta_{+}(T, \kappa)))$ , ...

$\delta_{+}^n(T, \kappa) = \delta_{+}(T, \delta_{+}(T, \delta_{+}(T, \delta_{+}(\dots))))$ .

**Lemma 4.1.1** Let our time scale  $\mathbb{T}$  be periodic in shifts and for each  $t \in \mathbb{T}^*$ ,  $(\delta_{+}^n(T, t))^{\Delta}$  is constant. Then  $\frac{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_{+}(T, \kappa)} u(t) \Delta t}{\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(T, \kappa))}$  is also constant  $\forall \kappa \in \mathbb{T}$ ,

where  $\kappa = \delta_{\pm}^m(T, t_0)$  for  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  and  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(T, \kappa)) = \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_{+}(T, \kappa)} 1 \Delta t$ . Here  $u(t)$  is a periodic function in shifts.

**Proof.** We get the desired result, if we can be able to show that for any

$$\kappa_1 \neq \kappa_2 \ (\kappa_1, \kappa_2 \in \mathbb{T}).$$

$$\frac{\int_{\kappa_1}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)} u(t) \Delta t}{mes(\delta_+(T, \kappa_1))} = \frac{\int_{\kappa_2}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_2)} u(t) \Delta t}{mes(\delta_+(T, \kappa_2))}.$$

Since  $\mathbb{T}$  is a periodic time scale in shifts (WLOG  $\kappa_2 > \kappa_1$ ) there exists  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  such that

$$\kappa_2 = \delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1). \text{ Hence it is also enough to show that}$$

$$\frac{\int_{\kappa_1}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)} u(t) \Delta t}{mes(\delta_+(T, \kappa_1))} = \frac{\int_{\delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1)}^{\delta_+(T, \delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1))} u(t) \Delta t}{mes(\delta_+(T, \delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1)))}.$$

Because of the definition of the time scale and  $u$ ,  $u(\kappa_1) = u(\delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1))$ ,

$u(\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)) = u(\delta_+^{n+1}(T, \kappa_1))$  and for each  $t \in [\kappa_1, \delta_+(T, \kappa_1)]$ ,  $u(t) = u(\delta_+^n(T, t))$ .

By using change of variables we get the result. If  $s = \delta_+^n(T, t)$ , then by the assumption of the lemma  $\Delta s = \tilde{c} \Delta t$ . When  $s = \delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1)$ , then  $t = \delta_+^n(T, s) = \kappa_1$  and when  $s = \delta_+^{n+1}(T, \kappa_1)$ , then  $t = \delta_+^n(T, s) = \delta_+(T, \kappa_1)$ .

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{\delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1)}^{\delta_+^{n+1}(T, \kappa_1)} u(s) \Delta s &= \tilde{c} \int_{\kappa_1}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)} u(t) \Delta t, \\ \int_{\delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1)}^{\delta_+^{n+1}(T, \kappa_1)} 1 \Delta t &= \tilde{c} \int_{\kappa_1}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)} 1 \Delta t, \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\frac{\int_{\kappa_1}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)} u(t) \Delta t}{mes(\delta_+(T, \kappa_1))} = \frac{\tilde{c} \int_{\kappa_1}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa_1)} u(t) \Delta t}{\tilde{c} mes(\delta_+(T, \kappa_1))}.$$

Hence proof follows. □

## 4.2 Main Result

The equation that we investigate is:

$$\begin{aligned} x^\Delta(t) &= a(t) - b(t) \exp(x(t)) - \frac{c(t) \exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t) \exp(x(t)) + m(t) \exp(y(t))}, \\ y^\Delta(t) &= -d(t) + \frac{f(t) \exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t) \exp(x(t)) + m(t) \exp(y(t))}, \end{aligned} \tag{4.1}$$

In equation (4.1), let  $a(t) = a(\delta_{\pm}(T, t))$ ,  $b(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = b(t)$ ,  $c(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = c(t)$ ,  $d(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = d(t)$ ,  $f(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = f(t)$ ,  $\alpha(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = \alpha(t)$ ,  $\beta(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = \beta(t)$ ,  $m(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = m(t)$ ,

and  $\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} a(t)\Delta t, \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} b(t)\Delta t, \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} d(t)\Delta t > 0$ .  $\beta^l = \min_{t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]} \beta(t)$ ,  $m^l = \min_{t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]} m(t)$ ,  $\beta^u = \max_{t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]} \beta(t)$ ,  $m^u = \max_{t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]} m(t)$ , such that  $\kappa = \delta_{\pm}^m(T, t_0)$  for  $m \in \mathbb{N}$ .  $m(t) > 0$  and  $c(t), f(t), b(t) > 0$ ,  $\alpha(t) \geq 0$ ,  $\beta(t) > 0$ . Each functions are from  $C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .

**Lemma 4.2.1** *Let  $t_1, t_2 \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]$  and  $t \in \mathbb{T}$ .  $\kappa$  is defined as in Lemma 1. If  $g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is periodic function in shifts, then*

$$g(t) \leq g(t_1) + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s \quad \text{and} \quad g(t) \geq g(t_2) - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s.$$

**Proof.** We only show the first inequality as the proof of the second inequality is similar to the proof of the other one. Since  $g$  is periodic function in shifts, without loss of generality, it suffices to show that the inequality is valid for  $t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]$ . If  $t = t_1$  then the first inequality is obviously true. If  $t > t_1$

$$g(t) - g(t_1) \leq |g(t) - g(t_1)| = \left| \int_{t_1}^t g^{\Delta}(s)\Delta s \right| \leq \int_{t_1}^t |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s \leq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s.$$

Therefore  $g(t) \leq g(t_1) + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s$ .

If  $t < t_1$

$$g(t_1) - g(t) \geq -|g(t_1) - g(t)| = -\left| \int_t^{t_1} g^{\Delta}(s)\Delta s \right| \geq -\int_t^{t_1} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s \leq -\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s,$$

that gives  $g(t) \leq g(t_1) + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} |g^{\Delta}(s)|\Delta s$ .

The proof is complete. □

**Theorem 4.2.1** *In addition to conditions on coefficient functions and*

*Lemma 4.1.1* if  $\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t)\Delta t - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{c(t)}{m(t)}\Delta t > 0$  and

$$\left( \frac{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t)\Delta t - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{c(t)}{m(t)}\Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t)\Delta t} \right) \exp \left[ - \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |a(t)|\Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t)\Delta t \right) \right] \cdot \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t)\Delta t - \beta^u \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t)\Delta t \right) - \alpha^u \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t)\Delta t \right) > 0 \right.$$

are satisfied then there exist at least a  $\delta_{\pm}$ -periodic solution.

**Proof.**  $X := \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \in C(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R}^2) : u(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = u(t), v(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = v(t) \right\}$  with

the norm:

$$\left\| \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right\| = \max_{t \in [t_0, \delta_+(T, t_0)]_{\mathbb{T}}} (|u(t)|, |v(t)|)$$

$Y := \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \in C(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R}^2) : u(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = u(t), v(\delta_{\pm}(T, t)) = v(t) \right\}$  with the norm:

$$\left\| \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right\| = \max_{t \in [t_0, \delta_+(T, t_0)]_{\mathbb{T}}} (|u(t)|, |v(t)|)$$

Let us define the mappings  $L$  and  $C$  by  $L : \text{Dom}L \subset X \rightarrow Y$  such that

$$L \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} u^{\Delta} \\ v^{\Delta} \end{bmatrix}$$

and  $C : X \rightarrow Y$  such that

$$C \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} a(t) - b(t)\exp(u(t)) - \frac{c(t)\exp(v(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(u(t)) + m(t)\exp(v(t))} \\ -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(u(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(u(t)) + m(t)\exp(v(t))} \end{bmatrix}$$

Then  $\text{Ker}L = \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} : \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} c_1 \\ c_2 \end{bmatrix} \right\}$ ,  $c_1$  and  $c_2$  are constants.

$$\text{Im}L = \left\{ \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} : \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} u(t)\Delta t \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} v(t)\Delta t \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right\}.$$

$ImL$  is closed in  $Y$ . Its obvious that  $dimKerL = 2$  To show  $dimKerL = codimImL = 2$ , we have to prove that  $KerL \oplus ImL = Y$ . It is obvious that when we take an element from  $KerL$ , an element from  $ImL$ ; we find an element of  $Y$  by summing these two elements. If we take an element  $\begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \in Y$ , and WLOG taking  $u(t)$  we have,  $\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} u(t)\Delta t = I$  where  $I$  is a constant. Let us define a new function  $g = u - \frac{I}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))}$ . Since  $\frac{I}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))}$  is constant by Lemma 4.1.1 if we take the integral of  $g$  from  $\kappa$  to  $\delta_+(T,\kappa)$ , we get

$$\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} g(t)\Delta t = \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} u(t)\Delta t - I = 0.$$

Similar steps are used for  $v$ .  $\begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \in Y$  can be written as the summation of an element from  $ImL$  and an element from  $KerL$ . Also it is easy to show that any element in  $Y$  is uniquely expressed as the summation of an element  $KerL$  and an element from  $ImL$ . So  $codimImL$  is also 2, we get the desired result. Hence  $L$  is a Fredholm mapping of index zero. There exist continuous projectors  $U : X \rightarrow X$  and  $V : Y \rightarrow Y$  such that

$$U \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) = \frac{1}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))} \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} u(t)\Delta t \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} v(t)\Delta t \end{bmatrix}$$

and

$$V \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) = \frac{1}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} u(t)\Delta t \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} v(t)\Delta t \end{bmatrix} \right).$$

The generalized inverse  $K_U = ImL \rightarrow DomL \cap KerU$  is given,

$$K_U \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^t u(s)\Delta s - \frac{1}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \int_{\kappa}^t u(s)\Delta s \\ \int_{\kappa}^t v(s)\Delta s - \frac{1}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \int_{\kappa}^t v(s)\Delta s \end{bmatrix}.$$

$$VC \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) =$$

$$\frac{1}{mes(\delta_+(T,\kappa))} \left( \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(s) - b(s)\exp(u(s)) - \frac{c(s)\exp(v(s))}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)\exp(u(s))+m(s)\exp(v(s))} \Delta s \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} -d(s) + \frac{f(s)\exp(u(s))}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)\exp(u(s))+m(s)\exp(v(s))} \Delta s \end{bmatrix} \right)$$

Let

$$a(t) - b(t)\exp(u(t)) - \frac{c(t)\exp(v(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(u(t)) + m(t)\exp(v(t))} = C_1$$

$$-d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(u(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(u(t)) + m(t)\exp(v(t))} = C_2$$

$$\frac{1}{\text{mes}(\delta_+(T, \kappa))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} a(s) - b(s)\exp(u(s)) - \frac{c(s)\exp(v(s))}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s)\exp(u(s)) + m(s)\exp(v(s))} \Delta s = \bar{C}_1$$

and

$$\frac{1}{\text{mes}(\delta_+(T, \kappa))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} -d(s) + \frac{f(s)\exp(u(s))}{\alpha(s) + \beta(s)\exp(u(s)) + m(s)\exp(v(s))} \Delta s = \bar{C}_2$$

$$\begin{aligned} K_U(I - V)C \left( \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} \right) &= K_U \left( \begin{bmatrix} C_1 - \bar{C}_1 \\ C_2 - \bar{C}_2 \end{bmatrix} \right) \\ &= \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^t C_1(s) - \bar{C}_1(s) \Delta s - \frac{1}{\text{mes}(\delta_+(T, \kappa))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} \int_{\kappa}^t C_1(s) - \bar{C}_1(s) \Delta s \\ \int_{\kappa}^t C_2(s) - \bar{C}_2(s) \Delta s - \frac{1}{\text{mes}(\delta_+(T, \kappa))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} \int_{\kappa}^t C_2(s) - \bar{C}_2(s) \Delta s \end{bmatrix}. \end{aligned}$$

Clearly,  $VC$  and  $K_U(I - V)C$  are continuous. Since  $X$  and  $Y$  are Banach spaces, then by using Arzela-Ascoli theorem we can find  $K_U(I - V)C(\bar{\Omega})$  is compact for any open bounded set  $\Omega \subset X$ . Additionally,  $VC(\bar{\Omega})$  is bounded. Thus,  $C$  is L-compact on  $\bar{\Omega}$  with any open bounded set  $\Omega \subset X$ .

To apply the continuation theorem we investigate the below operator equation.

$$\begin{aligned} x^\Delta(t) &= \lambda \left[ a(t) - b(t)\exp(x(t)) - \frac{c(t)\exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))} \right] \\ y^\Delta(t) &= \lambda \left[ -d(t) + \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))} \right] \end{aligned} \quad (4.2)$$

Let  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in X$  be any solution of system (4.2). Integrating both sides of system (4.2) over the interval  $[0, w]$  we obtain,

$$\begin{cases} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} a(t) \Delta t = \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} b(t)\exp(x(t)) + \frac{c(t)\exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))} \Delta t & , \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} d(t) \Delta t = \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T, \kappa)} \frac{f(t)\exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t)\exp(x(t)) + m(t)\exp(y(t))} \Delta t & , \end{cases} \quad (4.3)$$

From (4.2) and (4.3) we get

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |x^\Delta(t)| \Delta t &\leq \lambda \left[ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |a(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \exp(x(t)) + \frac{c(t) \exp(y(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t) \exp(x(t)) + m(t) \exp(y(t))} \Delta t \right], \\
&\leq \lambda \left[ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |a(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t \right] \\
&\leq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |a(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t := M_1
\end{aligned} \tag{4.4}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |y^\Delta(t)| \Delta t &\leq \lambda \left[ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |d(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{f(t) \exp(x(t))}{\alpha(t) + \beta(t) \exp(x(t)) + m(t) \exp(y(t))} \Delta t \right] \\
&\leq \lambda \left[ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |d(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t \right] \\
&\leq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |d(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t := M_2
\end{aligned} \tag{4.5}$$

Since  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in X$ , then there exist  $\eta_i, \xi_i, i = 1, 2$  such that

$$\begin{aligned}
x(\xi_1) &= \min_{t \in [t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T,\kappa)]} x(t), x(\eta_1) = \max_{t \in [t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T,\kappa)]} x(t), \\
y(\xi_2) &= \min_{t \in [t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T,\kappa)]} y(t), y(\eta_2) = \max_{t \in [t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T,\kappa)]} y(t)
\end{aligned} \tag{4.6}$$

If  $\xi_1$  is the minimum point of  $x(t)$  on the interval  $[\kappa, \delta_+(T, \kappa)]$  because  $x(t)$  is a function that is periodic in shifts for any  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  on the interval  $[\delta_+^n(T, \kappa_1), \delta_+^{n+1}(T, \kappa_1)]$  the minimum point of  $x(t)$  is  $\delta_+^n(T, \xi_1)$  and  $x(\xi_1) = x(\delta_+^n(T, \xi_1))$ . We have similar results for the other points for  $\xi_2, \eta_1, \eta_2$ .

By the first equation of (4.3) and (4.6)

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t &\leq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \left[ b(t) \exp(x(\eta_1)) + \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t \right] \\
&= \exp(x(\eta_1)) \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t.
\end{aligned}$$

Since  $\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \Delta t > 0$  so we get

$$x(\eta_1) \geq \ln \left( \frac{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{c(t)}{m(t)} \Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \Delta t} \right) := l_1$$

using the second inequality in Lemma 4.2.1 we have

$$\begin{aligned}
x(t) &\geq x(\eta_1) - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |x^\Delta(t)| \Delta t \\
&\geq x(\eta_1) - \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |a(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t \right) \\
&= l_1 - M_1 := H_1
\end{aligned} \tag{4.7}$$

By the first equation of (4.3) and (4.6)

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t &\geq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \exp(x(\xi_1)) \Delta t \\
&= \exp(x(\xi_1)) \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \Delta t.
\end{aligned}$$

Then we get

$$x(\xi_1) \leq \ln \left( \frac{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(t) \Delta t} \right) := l_2$$

using the first inequality in Lemma 4.2.1 we have

$$\begin{aligned}
x(t) &\leq x(\xi_1) + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |x^\Delta(t)| \Delta t \\
&\leq x(\xi_1) + \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |a(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(t) \Delta t \right) \\
&= l_2 + M_1 := H_2
\end{aligned} \tag{4.8}$$

By (4.7) and (4.8)  $\max_{t \in [\kappa, \delta_+(T,\kappa)]} |x(t)| \leq \max\{|H_1|, |H_2|\} := B_1$ . From the second equation of (4.3) and the second equation of (4.7), we can derive that

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t &\leq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{f(t) \exp(x(t))}{\beta^l \exp(x(t)) + m^l \exp(y(t))} \Delta t \\
&\leq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{f(t) e^{H_2}}{\beta^l e^{H_2} + m^l \exp(y(\xi_2))} \Delta t \\
&= \frac{e^{H_2}}{\beta^l e^{H_2} + m^l \exp(y(\xi_2))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t.
\end{aligned}$$

Therefore

$$\exp(y(\xi_2)) \leq \frac{1}{m^l} \left( \frac{e^{H_2} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t} - \beta^l e^{H_2} \right)$$

By the assumption of the Theorem 4.2.1 we get,

$$\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t - \beta^l \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t \right) > 0 \text{ and}$$

$$y(\xi_2) \leq \ln \left( \frac{1}{m^l} \left( \frac{e^{H_2} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t} - \beta^l e^{H_2} \right) \right) := L_1$$

Hence, by using the first inequality in Lemma 4.2.1 and the second equation of (4.3),

$$\begin{aligned}
y(t) &\leq y(\xi_2) + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |y^\Delta(t)| \Delta t \\
&\leq y(\xi_2) + \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |d(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t \right) \\
&\leq L_1 + M_2 := H_3.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.9}$$

Again using the second equation of (4.3) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t &\geq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{f(t) \exp(x(t))}{\alpha^u + \beta^u \exp(x(t)) + m^u \exp(y(t))} \Delta t \\
&\geq \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{f(t) e^{H_1}}{\alpha^u + \beta^u e^{H_1} + m^u \exp(y(\eta_2))} \Delta t \\
&= \frac{e^{H_1}}{\alpha^u + \beta^u e^{H_1} + m^u \exp(y(\eta_2))} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t, \\
\exp(y(\eta_2)) &\geq \frac{1}{m^u} \left( \frac{e^{H_1} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t} - \beta^u e^{H_1} - \alpha^u \right).
\end{aligned}$$

Using the assumption of the Theorem 4.2.1 we obtain,

$$e^{H_1} \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t - \beta^u \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t \right) \right) - \alpha^u \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t \right) > 0$$

and

$$y(\eta_2) \geq \ln \left( \frac{1}{m^u} \left( \frac{e^{H_1} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} f(t) \Delta t}{\int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t} - \beta^u e^{H_1} - \alpha^u \right) \right) := L_2.$$

By using the second inequality in Lemma 4.2.1,

$$\begin{aligned}
y(t) &\geq y(\eta_2) - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |y^\Delta(t)| \Delta t \\
&\geq y(\eta_2) - \left( \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} |d(t)| \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(t) \Delta t \right) \\
&= L_2 - M_2 := H_4.
\end{aligned} \tag{4.10}$$

By (4.9) and (4.10) we have  $\max_{t \in [t_0, \delta_+(T, t_0)]} |y(t)| \leq \max\{|H_3|, |H_4|\} := B_2$ . Obviously,  $B_1$  and  $B_2$  are both independent of  $\lambda$ . Let  $M = B_1 + B_2 + 1$ . Then

$$\max_{t \in [t_0, \delta_+(T, t_0)]} \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| < M. \text{ Let } \Omega = \left\{ \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| \in X : \left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| < M \right\}$$

then  $\Omega$  verifies the requirement (a) in Theorem 3.1.1. When  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in KerL \cap \partial\Omega$ ,

$\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix}$  is a constant with  $\left\| \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right\| = M$ , then

$$VC \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) = \left( \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(s) - b(s)exp(x) - \frac{c(s)exp(y)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)exp(x)+m(s)exp(y)} \Delta t \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} -d(s) + \frac{f(s)exp(x)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)exp(x)+m(s)exp(y)} \Delta t \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right)$$

$$\neq \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$JVC \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) = VC \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right)$$

where  $J : ImV \rightarrow KerL$  is the identity operator.

Let us define the homotopy such that:  $H_\nu = \nu(JVC) + (1 - \nu)G$  where

$$G \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) = \begin{bmatrix} \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} a(s) - b(s)exp(x) \Delta t \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} d(s) - \frac{f(s)exp(x)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)exp(x)+m(s)exp(y)} \Delta t \end{bmatrix}$$

Take  $DJ_G$  as the determinant of the jacobian of  $G$ . Since  $\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in KerL$ , then jacobian of  $G$  is

$$\begin{bmatrix} -e^x \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} b(s) \Delta t & 0 \\ \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{-e^x f(s)}{\alpha(s)+\beta(s)e^x+m(s)e^y} \Delta t + \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{(e^x)^2 f(s) \beta(s)}{(\alpha(s)+\beta(s)e^x+m(s)e^y)^2} \Delta t & - \int_{\kappa}^{\delta_+(T,\kappa)} \frac{e^x e^y f(s) m(s)}{(\alpha(s)+\beta(s)e^x+m(s)e^y)^2} \Delta t \end{bmatrix}$$

All the functions in jacobian of  $G$  is positive then  $signDJ_G$  is always positive. Hence

$$deg(JVC, \Omega \cap KerL, 0) = deg(G, \Omega \cap KerL, 0) = \sum_{\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \in G^{-1} \left( \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \right)} signDJ_G \left( \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \end{bmatrix} \right) \neq 0.$$

Thus all the conditions of Theorem 3.1.1 are satisfied. Therefore system (4.1) has at least a positive  $\delta_{\pm}$ -periodic solution.  $\square$

**Example 4.2.1** Let  $\mathbb{T} = \{0\} \cup \cup_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} [2^{2n}, 2^{2n+1}]$ .  $\delta_{\pm}(4, t)$  is the shift operator and  $t_0 = 1$ .

$$\begin{aligned} x^{\Delta}(t) &= \left(\cos\left(\frac{\ln(t)}{\ln(1/\sqrt{2})}\pi\right) + 3\right) - \left(\cos\left(\frac{\ln|t|}{\ln(1/\sqrt{2})}\pi\right) + 1\right)\exp(x(t)) - \frac{\exp(y(t))}{6\exp(x(t))+2\exp(y(t))}, \\ y^{\Delta}(t) &= -\left(\sin\left(\frac{\ln|t|}{\ln(1/\sqrt{2})}\pi\right) + 0.5\right) + \frac{(\sin(\frac{\ln|t|}{\ln(1/\sqrt{2})}\pi)+5)\exp(x(t))}{6\exp(x(t))+2\exp(y(t))}, \end{aligned} \quad (4.11)$$

Each functions in system (11) are  $\delta_{\pm}(4, t)$  periodic and satisfies Theorem 1 then the system has at least one  $\delta_{\pm}(4, t)$  periodic solution. Here  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(4, 1)) = 1$ ,  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(4, 1.5)) = 2.5$ ,  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(4, 2)) = 4$ ,  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(4, 4)) = 4$ ,  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(4, 8)) = 16$  ... goes like that.

**Example 4.2.2** Let  $\mathbb{T} = \{0\} \cup q^{\mathbb{Z}}$ .  $\delta_{\pm}(q, t)$  is the shift operator and  $t_0 = 1$ .

$$\begin{aligned} x^{\Delta}(t) &= \left((-1)^{\frac{\ln|t|}{\ln(q)}} + 4\right) - \left((-1)^{\frac{\ln|t|}{\ln(q)}} + 0.5\right)\exp(x(t)) - \frac{\exp(y(t))}{\exp(x(t))+2\exp(y(t))}, \\ y^{\Delta}(t) &= -0.3 + \frac{((-1)^{\frac{\ln|t|}{\ln(q)}}+7)\exp(x(t))}{\exp(x(t))+2\exp(y(t))}, \end{aligned} \quad (4.12)$$

Each functions in system (12) are  $\delta_{\pm}(q^2, t)$  periodic and satisfies Theorem 1 then the system has at least one  $\delta_{\pm}(q^2, t)$  periodic solution. Here  $\text{mes}(\delta_{+}(q^2, t)) = 2$ .

## CHAPTER 5

### GENERALIZATION OF CONSTANTIN'S INEQUALITY AND ITS APPLICATION ON WATER PERCOLATION EQUATION

#### 5.1 Some Basic Definitions Related to Nabla and Diamond- $\alpha$ Time Scales Calculus

**Definition 5.1.1** [3] For a function  $f : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{T}$ , we define the  $\nabla$ -derivative of  $f$  at  $t \in \mathbb{T}_\kappa$ , denoted by  $f^\nabla(t)$ , for all  $\epsilon > 0$ . There exists a neighborhood  $V \subset \mathbb{T}$  of  $t \in \mathbb{T}_\kappa$  such that

$$|f(s) - f(\rho(t)) - f^\nabla(t)(s - \rho(t))| \leq \epsilon |s - \rho(t)|,$$

for all  $s \in V$ .

**Definition 5.1.2** [41]  $\diamond_\alpha$ -derivative of  $f$  at  $t \in \mathbb{T}_\kappa^\kappa$ , denoted by  $f^{\diamond_\alpha}(t)$  for all  $\epsilon > 0$ . There is a neighbourhood  $U \subset \mathbb{T}$  such that for any  $s \in U$

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| \alpha |f(\sigma(t)) - f(s)| |\rho(t) - s| + (1 - \alpha) |f(\rho(t)) - f(s)| |\sigma(t) - s| - f^{\diamond_\alpha}(t) |\rho(t) - s| |\sigma(t) - s| \right| \\ & \leq \epsilon |\rho(t) - s| |\sigma(t) - s|. \end{aligned}$$

**Definition 5.1.3** [3] A function  $g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is ld-continuous if it is continuous at left dense points in  $\mathbb{T}$  and its right-sided limits exist at right-dense points in  $\mathbb{T}$ . The class of real ld-continuous functions defined on a time scale  $\mathbb{T}$  is denoted by  $C_{ld}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ . If  $g \in C_{ld}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  then there exists a function  $G(t)$  such that  $G^\nabla(t) = g(t)$ . The nabla integral is defined by  $\int_a^b g(x) \nabla x = G(b) - G(a)$ . If  $g \in C_{ld}^1(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  then  $g^\nabla(x)$  and  $g(x)$  are in  $C_{ld}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ .

**Definition 5.1.4** [41] A function  $h(t) : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is  $C_{rl}$ -continuous if  $h(t) \in C_{rd}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R}) \cap C_{ld}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ . If  $h \in C_{rl}^1(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$  then  $h^{\diamond\alpha}(x)$  and  $h(x)$  are from  $C_{rl}(\mathbb{T}, \mathbb{R})$ . Fundamental theorem of calculus does not true for  $\diamond_\alpha$ -derivative. By [46], we know that

$$\left( \int_a^t f(s) \diamond_\alpha s \right)^{\diamond\alpha} = (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)f(t) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)[f(\rho(t)) + f(\sigma(t))].$$

Below formulas are taken from [8], [3] and [17].

The linear combination of  $\alpha f + \beta g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is delta differentiable at  $t$  with

$$(\alpha f + \beta g)^\Delta = \alpha f^\Delta + \beta g^\Delta.$$

The linear combination of  $\alpha f + \beta g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is nabla differentiable at  $t$  with

$$(\alpha f + \beta g)^\nabla = \alpha f^\nabla + \beta g^\nabla.$$

The linear combination of  $\alpha f + \beta g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is diamond alpha differentiable at  $t$  with

$$(\alpha f + \beta g)^{\diamond\alpha} = \alpha f^{\diamond\alpha} + \beta g^{\diamond\alpha}.$$

The linear combination of  $\alpha f + \beta g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is delta integrable with

$$\int_a^t (\alpha f + \beta g)(s) \Delta s = \alpha \int_a^t f(s) \Delta s + \beta \int_a^t g(s) \Delta s.$$

The linear combination of  $\alpha f + \beta g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is nabla integrable with

$$\int_a^t (\alpha f + \beta g)(s) \nabla s = \alpha \int_a^t f(s) \nabla s + \beta \int_a^t g(s) \nabla s.$$

The linear combination of  $\alpha f + \beta g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is diamond alpha integrable with

$$\int_a^t (\alpha f + \beta g)(s) \diamond_\alpha s = \alpha \int_a^t f(s) \diamond_\alpha s + \beta \int_a^t g(s) \diamond_\alpha s.$$

## 5.2 Literature Review on Constantin's Inequality

Adrian Constantin [14] while studying the integrodifferential equation

$$x'(t) = F \left( t, x(t), \int_0^t K[t, s, x(s)] ds \right)$$

found the following interesting result in 1996. Applying the below inequality and a topological transversality theorem, he showed that, under some suitable assumptions, the above integrodifferential equation has a solution and gave bounds on that solution.

**Theorem 5.2.1** [14] *If for some  $k, T > 0$ ,  $u \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  satisfies*

$$u^2(t) \leq k^2 + 2 \int_0^t \left\{ f(s)u(s) \left[ u(s) + \int_0^s g(\tau)w(u(\tau))d\tau \right] + h(s)u(s) \right\} ds$$

$\forall t \in [0, T]$ , where  $f, g, h \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  and  $w$  belongs to the continuous nondecreasing functions class on  $\mathbb{R}_0^+$  such that  $w(r) > 0$  if  $r > 0$  and satisfying  $\int_1^\infty \frac{ds}{w(s)} = \infty$ , then

$$u(t) \leq K(t) + \int_0^t f(s)G^{-1} \left\{ G(K(t)) + \int_0^s [f(\tau) + g(\tau)]d\tau \right\} ds$$

where  $K(t) = k + \int_0^t h(s)ds$ ,  $G(r) = \int_1^r \frac{ds}{s+w(s)}$ ,  $r > 1$ .  $G^{-1}$  denotes the inverse function of  $G$ .

The generalization of this inequality given by Yang and Tan and can be stated as:

**Theorem 5.2.2** [54] *Let  $u, c \in C(\mathbb{R}_+^0, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$  with  $c$  being non-decreasing and*

$\phi \in C^1(\mathbb{R}_+^0, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$  where  $\phi'$  is non-negative and non-decreasing. Let

$f(t, \xi), g(t, \xi), h(t, \xi) \in C(\mathbb{R}_+^0 \times \mathbb{R}_+^0, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$  be nondecreasing in  $t$  for every fixed  $\xi$ .

Further let  $w \in C(\mathbb{R}_+^0, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$  be non decreasing,  $w(r) > 0$  for  $r > 0$ , and

$\int_{r_0}^\infty \frac{ds}{w(s)} = \infty$  hold for some number  $r_0 > 0$ . Then the integral inequality

$$\Phi(u(t)) \leq c(t) + \int_0^t \left\{ f(s)\Phi'(u(s)) \left[ u(s) + \int_0^s g(\tau)w(u(\tau))d\tau \right] + h(s)\Phi'(u(s)) \right\} ds$$

implies

$$u(t) \leq K(t) + \int_0^t f(s)G^{-1} \left\{ G(K(t)) + \int_0^s [f(\tau) + g(\tau)]d\tau \right\} ds$$

where

$$K(t) = \Phi^{-1}(c(t)) + \int_0^t h(s)ds$$

$$G(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{s+w(s)}, r > r_0, \quad 1 > r_0 > 0.$$

They also present the discrete analogue of Theorem 5.2.1 which is given by

**Theorem 5.2.3** [54] *Let the function  $w \in C(\mathbb{R}_+, \mathbb{R}_+)$  be non decreasing,*

*$w(r) > 0$  for  $r > 0$ ,  $\phi \in C^1(\mathbb{R}_+, \mathbb{R}_+)$  with  $\phi'$  being non negative and non decreasing.*

*$u, c \in C(\mathbb{N}_M, \mathbb{R}_+)$  with  $c(n)$  non-decreasing. Further let*

*$f(n, s), g(n, s), h(n, s) \in C(\mathbb{N}_M \times \mathbb{N}_M, \mathbb{R}_+)$  be non-decreasing with respect to  $n$  for every  $s$  fixed. Then the discrete inequality*

$$\phi[u(n)] \leq c(n) + \sum_{s=0}^{n-1} \{f(n, s)\phi'[u(s)] \times \left[ u(s) + \sum_{\xi=0}^{s-1} g(s, \xi)w(u(\xi)) \right] + h(n, s)\phi'[u(s)]\},$$

*$n \in \mathbb{N}_M$  implies*

$$u(n) \leq L(n) + \sum_{s=0}^{n-1} f(n, s)G^{-1}\left(G[L(n)] + \sum_{\xi=0}^{s-1} f(n, \xi) + g(n, \xi)\right),$$

Here  $G(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{s+w(s)}$ ,  $r \leq r_0$ ,  $1 > r_0 > 0$ ,  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} G(x) = \infty$ ,

$$L(n) = \phi^{-1}[c(n)] + \sum_{s=0}^{n-1} h(n, s).$$

$$\mathbb{N}_M = \{n \in \mathbb{N} : n \leq M, M \in \mathbb{N}\}$$

Ferriara generalized Constantin's inequality involving delta derivatives on an arbitrary Time Scale.

**Theorem 5.2.4** [27] *Assume that  $u \in C_{rd}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$ ,  $c \in C_{rd}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}^+)$  is non-decreasing,  $\Phi \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  is strictly increasing function such that*

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} \Phi(x) = \infty.$$

*Let  $f(t, \xi), h(t, \xi) \in C_{rd}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}} \times [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}^\kappa}, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  and  $g(t, \xi) \in C_{rd}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}^\kappa} \times [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}^{\kappa^2}}, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  be non-decreasing in for every fixed  $\xi$ . Further, let  $w, \phi, \Psi \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  be non-decreasing such that  $\{w, \phi, \Psi\}(x) > 0$  for every  $x > 0$ . Define*

$$M(x) = \max\{\phi(x), \Psi(x)\}$$

*on  $\mathbb{R}_0^+$  and assume that the following function*

$$F(x) = \int_{x_0}^x \frac{ds}{M \circ \Phi^{-1}(s)}$$

with  $x > c(a) > x_0 \geq 0$  if  $\int_0^x \frac{ds}{M\phi\Phi^{-1}(s)} < \infty$  and  $x > c(a) > x_0 > 0$

if  $\int_0^x \frac{ds}{M\phi\Phi^{-1}(s)} = \infty$ ; satisfies  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} F(x) = \infty$ .

Also assume that the function

$$P(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{w(s)}$$

where  $r \geq 0, r_0 \geq 0$  if  $\int_0^r \frac{ds}{w(s)} < \infty$  and  $r > 0, r_0 > 0$

if  $\int_0^r \frac{ds}{w(s)} = \infty$ ; satisfies  $\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} P(r) = \infty$ .

Define  $K(t) =: F[c(t)] + \int_a^t h(t, s) \Delta s$  and  $G(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{w(s)+s}$ .

If  $\Phi^{-1}[F^{-1}(x)] \leq x$ , for all  $x \geq 0$  then the inequality

$$\Phi[u(t)] \leq c(t) + \int_a^t \left( f(t, s) \phi[u(s)] \left[ u(s) + \int_a^s g(s, \xi) w[u(s)] \Delta \xi \right] + h(t, s) \Psi[u(s)] \right) \Delta s$$

for  $t \in [a, b]_T$ , implies

$$u(t) \leq \Phi^{-1} \left[ F^{-1} \left( K(t) + \int_a^t \left( f(t, s) G^{-1} \left[ G(K(t)) + \int_a^s \max \{f(t, \xi), g(t, \xi)\} \Delta \xi \right] \right) \Delta s \right) \right].$$

### 5.3 Some New Results

We try to generalize Constantin's inequality containing nabla and diamond-alpha derivatives and present the results we have obtained.

First we look for the discrete analogue of Constantin's inequality involving nabla derivatives. By using mean value theorem and the fundamental theorem of calculus for nabla derivatives we get the below result.

**Theorem 5.3.1** *Let the function  $w \in C(\mathbb{R}_+, \mathbb{R}_+)$  be non decreasing,  $w(r) > 0$  for  $r > 0$ ,  $\phi \in C^1(\mathbb{R}_+, \mathbb{R}_+)$  with  $\phi'$  being non negative and non-decreasing.*

*$u, c \in C(\mathbb{N}_M, \mathbb{R}_+)$  with  $c(n)$  non-decreasing. Further, let*

$\theta(n, s), \lambda(n, s), \gamma(n, s) \in C(\mathbb{N}_M \times \mathbb{N}_M, \mathbb{R}_+)$  be non-decreasing with respect to  $n$  for every  $s$  fixed. Then if the following discrete inequality is satisfied

$$\phi[u(n)] \leq c(n) + \sum_{s=1}^n \left\{ \theta(n, s) \phi'[u(s)] \times \left[ u(s) + \sum_{\xi=1}^s \lambda(s, \xi) w(u(\xi)) \right] + \gamma(n, s) \phi'[u(s)] \right\},$$

$n \in \mathbb{N}_M$ , there exists  $k, l > 0$  such that the following inequality is true

$$u(n) \leq \tilde{L}(n) + \sum_{\xi=1}^n k \theta(n, \xi) G^{-1} \left( G[\tilde{L}(n)] + l \sum_{s=1}^{\xi} k \theta(n, s) + \lambda(n, s) \right), k, l \geq 1.$$

Here  $G(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{s+w(s)}$ ,  $r \leq r_0$ ,  $1 > r_0 > 0$ ,  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} G(x) = \infty$ ,

$$\tilde{L}(n) = \phi^{-1}[c(n)] + k \sum_{s=1}^n \gamma(n, s).$$

$$\mathbb{N}_M = \{n \in \mathbb{N} : n \leq M, M \in \mathbb{N}\}$$

**Proof.** Fixing an arbitrary positive integer  $m \in (0, M]$ . We denote the set

$I = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, m\}$  and we define a positive function  $v(n) \in K(I, \mathbb{R}_+)$  such that

$$v(n) = c(m) + \sum_{s=1}^n \left\{ \theta(m, s) \phi'[u(s)] \left[ u(s) + \sum_{\xi=1}^s \lambda(m, \xi) w(u(\xi)) \right] + \gamma(m, s) \phi'[u(s)] \right\}$$

Then  $\phi(u(n)) \leq v(n)$ , equivalently  $u(n) \leq \phi^{-1}[v(n)]$ . Taking the nabla derivative of  $v(n)$  we get,

$$\begin{aligned} \nabla v(n) &= \theta(m, n) \phi'[u(n)] \left[ u(n) + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s) w(u(s)) \right] + \gamma(m, n) \\ &\leq \theta(m, n) \phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n)]] \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(n)] + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s) w(\phi^{-1}[v(n)]) \right] + \gamma(m, n) \\ &= \phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n)]] \left\{ \theta(m, n) \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(n)] + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s) w(\phi^{-1}[v(n)]) \right] + \gamma(m, n) \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

$$\frac{\nabla v(n)}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n)]]} \leq \theta(m, n) \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(n)] + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s) w(\phi^{-1}[v(n)]) \right] + \gamma(m, n). \quad (5.1)$$

Since we have finitely many elements in the domain then the value of the functions are bounded and since each function goes to  $\mathbb{R}_+$  never takes 0. Then

$$k = \max \left\{ \frac{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(m)]]}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(m-1)]]}, \frac{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(m-1)]]}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(m-2)]]}, \dots, \frac{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n)]]}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n-1)]]}, \dots, \frac{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(1)]]}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(0)]]} \right\}$$

is exist.

If we multiply (5.1) by  $k$ , we get

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\nabla v(n)}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n-1)]]} &\leq k \frac{\nabla v(n)}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n)]]} \\ &\leq k\theta(m, n) \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(n)] + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s)w(\phi^{-1}[v(n)]) \right] + k\gamma(m, n). \end{aligned}$$

By mean value theorem  $\nabla\phi^{-1}[v(n)] \leq \frac{\nabla v(n)}{\phi'[\phi^{-1}[v(n-1)]]}$ . Therefore

$$\nabla\phi^{-1}[v(n)] \leq k\theta(m, n) \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(n)] + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s)w(\phi^{-1}[v(n)]) \right] + k\gamma(m, n).$$

Substituting  $n$  with  $\xi$  in the last assertion and summing over  $\xi = 1, \dots, n$  we have

$$\phi^{-1}[v(n)] \leq \phi^{-1}[v(0)] + k \sum_{\xi=1}^m \gamma(m, \xi) + k \sum_{\xi=1}^n \theta(m, \xi) \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(\xi)] + \sum_{s=1}^{\xi} \lambda(m, s)w[\phi^{-1}[v(s)]] \right].$$

Define the right hand side of the last inequality as  $y(n)$ , then we get

$\phi^{-1}[v(n)] \leq y(n)$  for  $n \in I$ . Taking the nabla derivative of  $y(n)$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \nabla y(n) &= k\theta(m, n) \left[ \phi^{-1}[v(n)] + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s)w[\phi^{-1}[v(s)]] \right] \\ &\leq k\theta(m, n) \left[ y(n) + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s)w[y(s)] \right], n \in I. \end{aligned}$$

We define  $\Omega(n) = y(n) + \sum_{s=1}^n \lambda(m, s)w[y(s)]$ . Here  $y(n) \leq \Omega(n)$ . Then we get

$$\nabla y(n) = k\theta(m, n)\Omega(n).$$

Take the nabla derivative of  $\Omega(n)$ , we get

$$\begin{aligned} \nabla\Omega(n) &= \nabla y(n) + \lambda(m, n)w(y(n)) \\ &\leq k\theta(m, n)\Omega(n) + \lambda(m, n)w(\Omega(n)) \\ &\leq [k\theta(m, n) + \lambda(m, n)][\Omega(n) + w(\Omega(n))]. \end{aligned}$$

$$\frac{\nabla\Omega(n)}{\Omega(n) + w(\Omega(n))} \leq k\theta(m, n) + \lambda(m, n). \quad (5.2)$$

By mean value theorem

$$\int_{\Omega(n-1)}^{\Omega(n)} \frac{ds}{s + w(s)} \leq \frac{\nabla\Omega(n)}{\Omega(n-1) + w(\Omega(n-1))}.$$

Substituting  $n$  with  $s$  and summing over  $s = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , we have

$$\int_{\Omega(0)}^{\Omega(n)} \frac{ds}{s + w(s)} \leq \sum_{s=1}^n \frac{\nabla\Omega(s)}{\Omega(s-1) + w(\Omega(s-1))}.$$

For inequality (5.2) substituting  $n$  with  $s$  and summing over  $s = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , we obtain

$$\sum_{s=1}^n \frac{\nabla\Omega(s)}{\Omega(s) + w(\Omega(s))} \leq \sum_{s=1}^n k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s). \quad (5.3)$$

Let  $l = \max_{n \in [0, m]} \frac{\sum_{s=1}^n \frac{\nabla\Omega(s)}{\Omega(s-1) + w(\Omega(s-1))}}{\sum_{s=1}^n \frac{\nabla\Omega(s)}{\Omega(s) + w(\Omega(s))}}$ . Here  $l$  exists again because of the same reason of existence of  $k$ . Multiply (5.3) with  $l$ , we get

$$\sum_{s=1}^n \frac{\nabla\Omega(s)}{\Omega(s-1) + w(\Omega(s-1))} \leq l \sum_{s=1}^n k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s).$$

Therefore,

$$\int_{\Omega(0)}^{\Omega(n)} \frac{ds}{s + w(s)} \leq l \sum_{s=1}^n k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s).$$

Then

$$G[\Omega(n)] - G[\Omega(0)] \leq l \sum_{s=1}^n k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s)$$

and

$$\Omega(n) \leq G^{-1} \left( G[\Omega(0)] + l \sum_{s=1}^n k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s) \right).$$

Since  $\nabla y(n) \leq k\theta(m, n)\Omega(n)$ , then

$$\nabla y(n) \leq k\theta(m, n)G^{-1} \left( G[\Omega(0)] + l \sum_{s=1}^n k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s) \right).$$

Substituting  $n$  with  $\xi$  and summing over  $\xi = 1, 2, \dots, n$  we get

$$y(n) \leq v(0) + \sum_{\xi=1}^n k\theta(m, \xi)G^{-1} \left( G[\Omega(0)] + l \sum_{s=1}^{\xi} k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s) \right)$$

Since  $u(n) \leq \phi^{-1}[v(n)] \leq y(n)$ , we get

$$u(n) \leq \tilde{L}(m) + \sum_{\xi=1}^n k\theta(m, \xi)G^{-1} \left( G[\tilde{L}(m)] + l \sum_{s=1}^{\xi} k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s) \right).$$

If we set  $m = n$  we have

$$u(m) \leq \tilde{L}(m) + \sum_{\xi=1}^m k\theta(m, \xi)G^{-1} \left( G[\tilde{L}(m)] + l \sum_{s=1}^{\xi} k\theta(m, s) + \lambda(m, s) \right).$$

Hence we get the desired result.  $\square$

**Example 5.3.1** *Let*

$$u^2(n) = L + 2 \sum_{s=1}^n P(n-s)u(s). \quad (5.4)$$

Here  $n \in [0, M]$ . The unique positive solution for equation (5.4) can be obtained by successive substitution. For instance by letting  $n = 0, 1, 2$  we obtain,

$$u(0) = \sqrt{L}$$

$$u(1) = \sqrt{L + 2P(0)u(1)}$$

$u(2) = \sqrt{L + 2P(1)u(1) + 2P(0)u(2)}$ . By using solution of quadratic equations we can find  $u(0), u(1), u(2), \dots, u(M)$  succesively. If we use the theorem above the bound for  $u$  will be  $u(n) \leq \sqrt{L} + k \sum_{s=1}^n P(n-s)$ . With the help of the proof of Theorem 5.3.1 here

$$\begin{aligned} k = \max_{n \in [0, M]} \left\{ 1 + \frac{2P(M-1)u(1)}{L}, 1 + \frac{2P(M-2)u(2)}{L+2P(M-1)u(1)}, \dots, \right. \\ 1 + \frac{2P(M-n)u(n)}{L+2P(M-1)u(1)+2P(M-2)u(2)+\dots+2P(M-n+1)u(n-1)}, \dots, \\ 1 + \frac{2P(0)u(M)}{L+2P(M-1)u(1)+\dots+2P(1)u(M-1)}, \\ 1 + \frac{2P(M-2)u(1)}{L}, 1 + \frac{2P(M-3)u(2)}{L+2P(M-2)u(1)}, \dots, \\ 1 + \frac{2P(M-1-n)u(n)}{L+2P(M-2)u(1)+2P(M-3)u(2)+\dots+2P(M-n)u(n-1)}, \dots, \\ \left. 1 + \frac{2P(0)u(M-1)}{L+2P(M-2)u(1)+\dots+2P(1)u(M-2)}, \dots, \right. \\ \left. 1 + \frac{2P(0)u(1)}{L} \right\} \end{aligned}$$

Here  $\theta(n, s) = \lambda(n, s) = 0$ ,  $\gamma(n, s) = P(n-s)$ ,  $c(n) = L > 0$ ,  $L$  is constant,  $u, P \in K(\mathbb{N}_0, \mathbb{R}_+)$ ,  $P$  is non-decreasing, and  $\phi(x) = x^2$ .

If we choose  $P(n, s)$ ,  $L$  good enough  $k$  does not exceed a number  $c$  when  $M$  tends to infinity. For instance, if  $P(n, s) = 1$ ,  $L = 3$  then  $k$  does not exceed 3 when  $M$  tends to infinity. Therefore, for the equality  $u^2(n) = 3 + 2 \sum_{s=1}^n u(s)$ , by using the theorem above we have the bound for

$$u(n) \leq \sqrt{3} + 3n, n \in \mathbb{N}$$

## 5.4 Generalization on Nabla Calculus

By using the two lemmas below we proved the generalized version of Theorem 5.3.1 for nabla derivatives.

**Lemma 5.4.1** *Let  $f : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  continuously differentiable and  $g : \mathbb{T} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  is nabla differentiable then  $f \circ g$  is nabla differentiable and the formula is given by*

$$(f \circ g)^\nabla(t) = g^\nabla(t) \left[ \int_0^1 f'(g(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)g^\nabla(t))dh \right]$$

1.  $\nu(t) = t - \rho(t)$
2.  $\mathbb{T}_\kappa = \mathbb{T} - \{m\}$  where  $m$  is the right scattered minimum.

**Proof.** Apply ordinary substitution rule from calculus.

$$f(g(s) - f(g(\rho(t))) = \int_{g(\rho(t))}^{g(s)} f'(\tau)d\tau.$$

If we take  $\tau = hg(s) + (1-h)g(\rho(t))$ , then  $d\tau = g(s) - g(\rho(t))dh$ . Then our integral becomes

$$f(g(s) - f(g(\rho(t))) = g(s) - g(\rho(t)) \int_0^1 f'(hg(s) - (1-h)g(\rho(t)))dh.$$

Let  $\epsilon > 0$  be given and  $t \in \mathbb{T}_\kappa$ . Then there exists neighbourhood  $U_1$  of  $t$ , since  $g$  is nabla differentiable at  $t$  such that

$$|g(s) - g(\rho(t)) - g^\nabla(t)(s - \rho(t))| \leq \epsilon^* |s - \rho(t)|, \forall s \in U_1$$

where  $\epsilon^* = \frac{\epsilon}{1 + 2 \int_0^1 |f'(hg(s) - (1-h)g(\rho(t)))|dh}$ . Since  $g$  is nabla differentiable then  $g$  is continuous, then we can obtain  $\forall \delta > 0 \exists U_2$  neighbourhood of  $t$  such that

$|g(s) - g(t)| < \delta, \forall s \in U_2$ . Since

$$\begin{aligned} |hg(s) + (1-h)g(\rho(t)) - (hg(t) + (1-h)g(\rho(t)))| &= h |g(s) - g(t)| \\ &\leq |g(s) - g(t)| < \delta. \end{aligned}$$

Here  $f$  is continuously differentiable function, then  $f'$  is continuous on  $\mathbb{R}$  and  $f'$  is uniformly continuous on closed subsets of  $\mathbb{R}$ . Therefore we have

$$|f'(h(g(s) + (1 - h)g(\rho(t))) - f'(h(g(t) + (1 - h)g(\rho(t))))| \leq \frac{\epsilon}{\epsilon^* + |g^\nabla(t)|}, \forall s \in U_2.$$

Here let us define neighbourhood  $U$  of  $t$  such that  $U = U_1 \cap U_2$ . Let us take

$\alpha = hg(s) + (1 - h)g(\rho(t))$  and  $\beta = hg(t) + (1 - h)g(\rho(t))$ . Then we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| fog(s) - fog(\rho(t)) - (s - \rho(t))g^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 f'(\beta)dh \right| \\ &= \left| g(s) - g(\rho(t)) \int_0^1 f'(\alpha)dh - (s - \rho(t))g^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 f'(\beta)dh \right| \\ &= \left| g(s) - g(\rho(t)) - (s - \rho(t))g^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 f'(\alpha)dh + (s - \rho(t))g^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 f'(\alpha) - f'(\beta)dh \right| \\ &\leq |g(s) - g(\rho(t)) - (s - \rho(t))g^\nabla(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha)| dh + |s - \rho(t)| |g^\nabla(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha) - f'(\beta)| dh \\ &\leq \epsilon^* |s - \rho(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha)| dh + |s - \rho(t)| |g^\nabla(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha) - f'(\beta)| dh \\ &= \epsilon^* |s - \rho(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha) - f'(\beta) + f'(\beta)| dh + |s - \rho(t)| |g^\nabla(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha) - f'(\beta)| dh \\ &\leq \epsilon^* |s - \rho(t)| \int_0^1 |f'(\beta)| dh + |s - \rho(t)| (|g^\nabla(t)| + \epsilon^*) \int_0^1 |f'(\alpha) - f'(\beta)| dh \\ &\leq \frac{\epsilon}{2} |s - \rho(t)| + \frac{\epsilon}{2} |s - \rho(t)| = \epsilon |s - \rho(t)| \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $fog$  is nabla differentiable and its derivative is as claimed above.  $\square$

Lemma 5.4.1 first occurred in the article of F. Atici [4] as

$$(fog)^\nabla(t) = g^\nabla(t) \left[ \int_0^1 f'(g(t) + h\nu(t)g^\nabla(t))dh \right].$$

With a counter example we can show that their version of the formula is not true.

**Example 5.4.1** Let  $g(x) : \mathbb{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that  $g(n) = \frac{1}{n}$ ,  $f(x) : \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$  such that  $f(x) = x^2$ . Therefore the first derivative of  $f(x)$  is continuous. If we apply the formula in Lemma 5.4.1 to find the nabla derivative of the function  $(fog)(t)$  we get

$$\frac{1 - 2n}{(n^2)(n - 1)^2} = \left(\frac{1}{n^2}\right)^\nabla \neq \left(\frac{1}{n}\right)^\nabla \int_0^1 \left[ 2\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) + 2h\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)^\nabla \right] dh = \frac{3 - 2n}{(n^2)(n - 1)^2}.$$

**Lemma 5.4.2** Let  $a, b \in \mathbb{T}$ , consider the Time Scale  $[a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$  and a function

$p \in C_{ld}^1([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$  with  $p^\nabla(t) \geq 0$ . Suppose that a function  $f \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  is positive and non-decreasing on  $\mathbb{R}$ . Define  $F(x) = \int_{x_0}^x \frac{ds}{f(s)}$ , where  $x \geq 0, x_0 \geq 0$

if  $\int_0^x \frac{ds}{f(s)} < \infty$  and  $x > 0, x_0 > 0$  if  $\int_0^x \frac{ds}{f(s)} = \infty$ . Then for each  $t \in [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$ , we have

$$F(p(t)) \leq F(p(a)) + \int_a^t \frac{p^\nabla(\tau)}{f(p(\rho(\tau)))} \nabla\tau.$$

**Proof.** Since  $f$  is positive and non-decreasing on  $(0, \infty)$ , we have

$$p(\rho(t)) \leq p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t)$$

$$f(p(\rho(t))) \leq f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))$$

and

$$\frac{1}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq \frac{1}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

If we integrate the last inequality from 0 to 1, we get

$$\int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)))} = \frac{1}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

Multiply both sides of the last inequality with  $p^\nabla(t)$ , since  $p^\nabla(t) \geq 0$  the inequality does not change

$$p^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq \frac{p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

Here we use Lemma 5.4.1 and we get

$$(Fop)^\nabla(t) \leq \frac{p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

If we integrate it from  $a$  to  $t$  we have

$$F(p(t)) - F(p(a)) \leq \int_a^t \frac{p^\nabla(\tau)}{f(p(\rho(\tau)))} \nabla\tau$$

and

$$F(p(t)) \leq F(p(a)) + \int_a^t \frac{p^\nabla(\tau)}{f(p(\rho(\tau)))} \nabla\tau.$$

Hence we get the desired result.  $\square$

The delta derivative version of the above lemma was proved by Torres and Ferriara [28]. By using these results we proved the below theorem.

**Theorem 5.4.1** *Assume that  $v \in C_{ld}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$ ,  $c \in C_{ld}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}^+)$  is non-decreasing,  $\Phi \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  is strictly increasing function such that*

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} \Phi(x) = \infty.$$

*Let  $\theta(t, \xi), \gamma(t, \xi) \in C_{ld}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}} \times [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}_{\kappa}}, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  and*

*$\lambda(t, \xi) \in C_{ld}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}_{\kappa}} \times [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}_{\kappa^2}}, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  be non-decreasing in for every fixed  $\xi$ . Further, let  $w, \phi, \Psi \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  be non-decreasing such that  $\{w, \phi, \Psi\}(x) > 0$  for every  $x > 0$ . Define*

$$M(x) = \max \{\phi(x), \Psi(x)\}$$

*on  $\mathbb{R}_0^+$  and assume that the following function*

$$\tilde{E}(x) = \int_{x_0}^x \frac{ds}{M \circ \Phi^{-1}(s)}$$

*with  $x > c(a) > x_0 \geq 0$  if  $\int_0^x \frac{ds}{M \circ \Phi^{-1}(s)} < \infty$  and  $x > c(a) > x_0 > 0$*

*if  $\int_0^x \frac{ds}{M \circ \Phi^{-1}(s)} = \infty$ ; satisfies  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} \tilde{E}(x) = \infty$ .*

*Also assume that the function*

$$R(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{w(s)}$$

*where  $r \geq 0, r_0 \geq 0$  if  $\int_0^r \frac{ds}{w(s)} < \infty$  and  $r > 0, r_0 > 0$*

*if  $\int_0^r \frac{ds}{w(s)} = \infty$ ; satisfies  $\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} R(r) = \infty$ .*

*Define  $\hat{L}(t) := \tilde{E}[c(t)] + \alpha \int_a^t \gamma(t, s) \nabla s$  and  $G(r) = \int_{r_0}^r \frac{ds}{w(s)+s}$ .*

*If  $\Phi^{-1}[\tilde{E}^{-1}(x)] \leq x$ , for all  $x \geq 0$  then the inequality*

$$\Phi[v(t)] \leq c(t) + \int_a^t \left( \theta(t, s) \phi[v(s)] \left[ v(s) + \int_a^s \lambda(s, \xi) w[v(s)] \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(t, s) \Psi[v(s)] \right) \nabla s$$

for  $t \in [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$ , implies

$$v(t) \leq \Phi^{-1} \left[ \tilde{E}^{-1} \left( \hat{L}(t) + \alpha \int_a^t \left( \theta(t, s) G^{-1} \left[ G(\hat{L}(t)) + \beta \int_a^s \max \{ \alpha \theta(t, \xi), \lambda(t, \xi) \} \nabla \xi \right] \nabla s \right) \right) \right] \text{ where } \alpha, \beta \geq 1 \text{ are constants.}$$

**Proof.** If  $t = a$  obviously theorem holds. Let us fix an arbitrary number  $t_0 \in (a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$  we define  $z(t)$  on  $[a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}$  such that

$$z(t) = c(t_0) + \int_a^t \left( \theta(t_0, s) \phi(v(s)) \left[ v(s) + \int_a^s \lambda(t_0, \xi) w(v(\xi)) \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(t_0, s) \Psi[v(s)] \right) \nabla s.$$

Since  $\Phi(v(t)) \leq z(t)$ , then  $v(t) \leq \Phi^{-1}(z(t))$ . Let us differentiate function  $z(t)$ .

$$\begin{aligned} z^\nabla(t) &= \theta(t_0, t) \phi(v(t)) \left[ v(t) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi) w(v(\xi)) \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(t_0, t) \Psi[v(t)] \\ &\leq M[v(t)] \left\{ \theta(t_0, t) \left[ v(t) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi) w[v(\xi)] \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(t_0, t) \right\} \\ &\leq M[\Phi^{-1}(z(t))] \left\{ \theta(t_0, t) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(t)) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi) w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(t_0, t) \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

Then we get

$$\frac{z^\nabla(t)}{M[\Phi^{-1}(z(t))]} \leq \theta(t_0, t) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(t)) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi) w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(t_0, t). \quad (5.5)$$

Define the function  $\check{z}(t)$  on  $[a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$  such that

$$\check{z}(t) = c(b) + \int_a^t \left( \theta(b, s) \phi[v(s)] \left[ v(s) + \int_a^s \lambda(b, \xi) w[v(\xi)] \nabla \xi \right] + \gamma(b, s) \Psi[v(s)] \right) \nabla s.$$

It is obvious that  $z(t) \leq \check{z}(t)$  on  $[a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}$ . Using  $\check{z}(t)$  we define  $\alpha$  such that

$$\alpha = \max_{t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}} \frac{M \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ \check{z}(t)}{M \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ z(a)}.$$

Here functions  $\check{z}(t)$  and  $z(t)$  are  $C_{ld}$  continuous because each function that constitute the functions  $\check{z}(t)$  and  $z(t)$  are continuous or  $C_{ld}$  continuous. Here  $M$  and  $\Phi^{-1}$  are continuous functions then  $M \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ \check{z}$  and  $M \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ z$  are also  $C_{ld}$  continuous functions, since each continuous function is  $C_{ld}$  continuous. We know that any  $C_{ld}$  continuous function is regulated and every regulated function is bounded in a compact interval by theorem from [8]. Therefore the functions  $M \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ \check{z}(t)$  and  $M \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ z(t)$  are

bounded on  $[a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$ , and also  $z(a) = c(t_0)$  can not be 0 since  $c(t) \in C_{ld}([a, b], \mathbb{R}^+)$ . Additionally since  $\Phi$  is strictly increasing  $M(x)$  is non decreasing and can not be zero if  $x \neq 0$  then  $M\circ\Phi^{-1}\circ z(a) \neq 0$  so the constant  $\alpha$  exists. Then

$$\alpha = \max_{t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}} \frac{M\circ\Phi^{-1}\circ z(t)}{M\circ\Phi^{-1}\circ z(a)} \geq \frac{M\circ\Phi^{-1}(z(t))}{M\circ\Phi^{-1}(z(\rho(t)))}$$

for all  $t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}$ . It is obvious that  $\alpha \geq 1$ .

If we multiply (5.5) by  $\alpha$ , we get

$$\frac{z^\nabla(t)}{M[\Phi^{-1}(z(\rho(t)))]} \leq \alpha\theta(t_0, t) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(t)) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla\xi \right] + \alpha\gamma(t_0, t).$$

By the Lemma 5.4.2, we get

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{E}(z(t)) &\leq \tilde{E}(c(t_0)) + \alpha \int_a^t \left( \theta(t_0, s) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(s)) + \int_a^s \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla\xi \right] \right) \nabla s \\ &\quad + \alpha \int_a^{t_0} \gamma(t_0, s) \nabla s. \\ z(t) &\leq \tilde{E}^{-1} \left[ \tilde{E}(c(t_0)) + \alpha \int_a^t \left( \theta(t_0, s) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(s)) + \int_a^s \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla\xi \right] \right) \nabla s \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \alpha \int_a^{t_0} \gamma(t_0, s) \nabla s \right]. \end{aligned}$$

Let's define  $y(t)$  as

$$\begin{aligned} y(t) &= \tilde{E}(c(t_0)) + \alpha \int_a^t \left( \theta(t_0, s) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(s)) + \int_a^s \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla\xi \right] \right) \nabla s \\ &\quad + \alpha \int_a^{t_0} \gamma(t_0, s) \nabla s. \end{aligned}$$

Then  $z(t) \leq \tilde{E}^{-1}(y(t))$ . Let us differentiate the function  $y(t)$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} y^\nabla(t) &= \alpha\theta(t_0, t) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(t)) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi))] \nabla\xi \right] \\ &\leq \alpha\theta(t_0, t) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(\tilde{E}^{-1}(y(t))) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[\Phi^{-1}(\tilde{E}^{-1}(y(\xi)))] \nabla\xi \right] \\ &\leq \alpha\theta(t_0, t) \left[ y(t) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[y(\xi)] \nabla\xi \right], \text{ since } \Phi^{-1}(\tilde{E}^{-1}(y(t))) \leq y(t). \end{aligned}$$

Let us define  $W(t)$  as  $W(t) = y(t) + \int_a^t \lambda(t_0, \xi)w[y(\xi)] \nabla\xi$ , so  $W(t) \geq y(t)$ . When we differentiate  $W(t)$  we get

$$\begin{aligned} W^\nabla(t) &= y^\nabla(t) + \lambda(t_0, t)w[y(t)] \\ &\leq \alpha\theta(t_0, t)W(t) + \lambda(t_0, t)w[W(t)]. \end{aligned}$$

Then

$$\frac{W^\nabla(t)}{W(t) + w[W(t)]} \leq \max \{ \alpha\theta(t_0, t), \lambda(t_0, t) \}. \quad (5.6)$$

Let us define  $\hat{y}(t)$  and  $\hat{W}(t)$  on  $[a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$  such that

$$\hat{y}(t) = \hat{L}(b) + \alpha \int_a^t \left( \theta(b, s) \left[ \Phi^{-1}(z(s)) + \int_a^s \lambda(b, \xi) w [\Phi^{-1}(z(\xi)) \nabla \xi] \right] \right) \nabla s$$

$$\hat{W}(t) = \hat{y}(t) + \int_a^t \lambda(b, \xi) w [\hat{y}(\xi)] \nabla \xi.$$

It is obvious that  $y(t) \leq \hat{y}(t)$  and  $W(t) \leq \hat{W}(t)$  on  $[a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}$ . Using  $\hat{W}(t)$  we define  $\beta$  such that

$$\beta = \max_{t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}} \frac{\hat{W}(t) + w(\hat{W}(t))}{W(a) + w(W(a))} \geq 1.$$

Here again  $W(t)$ ,  $y(t)$ ,  $\hat{y}(t)$ ,  $\hat{W}(t)$  and  $w(\hat{W}(t))$  are  $C_{ld}$  continuous. Thus these functions are bounded on  $[a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}$  [8] and  $W(a) + w(W(a))$  can not be zero. We know that  $W(a) = y(a) = \tilde{E}(c(t_0)) + \alpha \int_a^{t_0} h(t_0, s) \nabla s$ . Here also  $\tilde{E}(c(t_0))$  can not be zero since  $c(t_0) > x_0$ ,  $c(t_0)$  is finite and inside of the integral is never zero in the interval  $[x_0, c(t_0)]$  so the constant  $\beta$  exists. Then

$$\beta = \max_{t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}} \frac{\hat{W}(t) + w(\hat{W}(t))}{W(a) + w(W(a))} \geq \frac{W(t) + w(W(t))}{W(\rho(t)) + w(W(\rho(t)))}.$$

If we multiply (5.6) by  $\beta$ , then we get

$$\frac{W^\nabla(t)}{W(\rho(t)) + w(W(\rho(t)))} \leq \beta \max \{ \alpha\theta(t_0, t), \lambda(t_0, t) \}.$$

Again by using the Lemma 5.4.2 we have

$$G(W(t)) \leq G(\hat{L}(t_0)) + \beta \int_a^t \max \{ \alpha\theta(t_0, s), \lambda(t_0, s) \} \nabla s.$$

Then

$$W(t) = G^{-1} \left[ G(\hat{L}(t_0)) + \beta \int_a^t \max \{ \alpha\theta(t_0, s), \lambda(t_0, s) \} \nabla s \right].$$

Since  $y^\nabla(t) \leq \alpha\theta(t_0, t)W(t)$ , then  $y(t) \leq \hat{L}(t_0) + \alpha \int_a^t \theta(t_0, s)W(s) \nabla s$ . Therefore

$$y(t) \leq \hat{L}(t_0) + \alpha \int_a^t \theta(t_0, s) G^{-1} \left[ G(\hat{L}(t_0)) + \beta \int_a^s \max \{ \alpha\theta(t_0, \xi), \lambda(t_0, \xi) \} \nabla \xi \right].$$

Using above information we have  $v(t) \leq \Phi^{-1}(z(t)) \leq \Phi^{-1}(\tilde{E}^{-1}(y(t)))$ . Hence

$$v(t) \leq \Phi^{-1} \left[ \tilde{E}^{-1} \left( \hat{L}(t_0) + \alpha \int_a^t \left( \theta(t_0, s) G^{-1} \left[ G(\hat{L}(t_0)) \right. \right. \right. \right. \\ \left. \left. \left. + \beta \int_a^s \max \left\{ \alpha \theta(t_0, \xi), \lambda(t_0, \xi) \right\} \nabla \xi \right) \nabla s \right) \right].$$

Since  $t_0$  is arbitrary we can set  $t = t_0$  in the above inequality and we get the desired result. □

**Remark 5.4.1** *The above function  $G(r)$  defined above satisfies*

$\lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} G(r) = \infty$  by Constantin [16]. This was disgust in [7], [15], [30]

**Example 5.4.2** *If we take  $\phi(x) = \psi(x) = \Phi'(x)$  with  $\Phi'$  is non decreasing then  $M(x) = \Phi'(x)$  and this implies*

$$\tilde{E}(x) = \int_{x_0}^x \frac{1}{\Phi' \circ \Phi^{-1}(s)} ds = \Phi^{-1}(x) - \Phi^{-1}(x_0).$$

Choose  $x_0 = \Phi(0) \geq 0$ . Then  $\Phi^{-1}(\Phi(0)) = 0$  hence  $\tilde{E}(x) = \Phi^{-1}(x)$ . For the particular case  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{Z}$ , an application of Theorem 5.4.1 gives Theorem 5.3.1. For the particular case  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{R}$  an application of Theorem 5.4.1 gives the generalization of Constantin's inequality done by Yang and Tan. Since  $\alpha, \beta \geq 1$ , there is no problem.

**Example 5.4.3** *Let us take  $\mathbb{T} = h\mathbb{Z}$  such that  $x, t \in [0, Mh]$ ,  $\gamma(x, t) = P(x - t)$ ,  $\lambda(x, t) = \theta(t, x) = 0$ ,  $\Phi(x) = x^2$ ,  $\phi(x) = 0$ ,  $\psi(x) = \frac{x}{2}$  defined for  $x \geq 0$  and  $c(n) = L, L \geq 0$  is constant. Then*

$$M(x) = \max \left\{ \frac{x}{2}, 0 \right\} = \frac{x}{2}.$$

If we set  $x_0 = 0$ , we obtain

$$\tilde{E}(x) = \int_0^x \frac{1}{\frac{\sqrt{s}}{2}} ds = 4\sqrt{x}.$$

Thus,  $\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} \tilde{E}(x) = \infty$ .  $F^{-1}(x) = \left(\frac{x}{4}\right)^2$  and  $\Phi^{-1}(\tilde{E}^{-1}(x)) = \left(\frac{x}{4}\right) \leq x, \forall x \geq 0$ .

If we get the equality

$$u(hn)^2 = L + \sum_{t=1}^n hP(hn - ht) \frac{u(ht)}{2}.$$

By letting  $n = 0, 1, 2,$

$$u(0) = \sqrt{L}$$

$$u(h) = \sqrt{L + hP(0) \frac{u(h)}{2}}$$

$$u(2h) = \sqrt{L + hP(h) \frac{u(h)}{2} + hP(0) \frac{u(2h)}{2}}.$$

If we apply Theorem 5.4.1 we find a upper bound for  $u(hn)$  as

$$u(hn) \leq \sqrt{L} + \alpha \frac{\sum_{t=1}^n hP(hn - ht)}{4}.$$

Here

$$\begin{aligned} \alpha = \max_{n \in [0, M]} \left\{ 1 + \frac{P((M-1)h) \frac{u(h)}{2}}{L}, 1 + \frac{P((M-2)h) \frac{u(2h)}{2}}{L + P((M-1)h) \frac{u(h)}{2}}, \dots, \right. \\ 1 + \frac{P((M-n)h) \frac{u(nh)}{2}}{L + P((M-1)h) \frac{u(h)}{2} + P((M-2)h) \frac{u(2h)}{2} \dots + 2P((M-n+1)h) \frac{u((n-1)h)}{2}}, \dots, \\ 1 + \frac{P(0) \frac{u(Mh)}{2}}{L + P((M-1)h) \frac{u(h)}{2} + \dots + P(h) \frac{u((M-1)h)}{2}}, \dots, \\ 1 + \frac{P((M-2)h) \frac{u(h)}{2}}{L}, 1 + \frac{P((M-3)h) \frac{u(2h)}{2}}{L + P((M-2)h) \frac{u(h)}{2}}, \dots, \\ 1 + \frac{P((M-n-1)h) \frac{u(nh)}{2}}{L + P((M-2)h) \frac{u(h)}{2} + P((M-3)h) \frac{u(2h)}{2} \dots + 2P((M-n)h) \frac{u((n-1)h)}{2}}, \dots, \\ 1 + \frac{P(0) \frac{u((M-1)h)}{2}}{L + P((M-2)h) \frac{u(h)}{2} + \dots + P(h) \frac{u((M-2)h)}{2}}, \dots, \\ \left. 1 + \frac{P(0) \frac{u(h)}{2}}{L} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

## 5.5 Generalization on Diamond- $\alpha$ Calculus

We also proved Constantin's inequality for diamond-alpha derivatives. To get the desired result we use the below lemma.

**Lemma 5.5.1** *Let  $\mathbb{T}$  be a regulated Times Scale,  $a, b \in \mathbb{T}$ , and consider the Times Scale  $[a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$  such that  $\sigma(a) = a$ . Let  $p \in C_{rl}^1([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$  with*

$p^\nabla(t), p^\Delta(t) \geq 0$ . Suppose that a function  $f \in C(\mathbb{R}_0^+, \mathbb{R}_0^+)$  is positive and non-decreasing on  $\mathbb{R}$ .

Define  $F(x) = \int_{x_0}^x \frac{ds}{f(s)}$  where  $x \geq 0, x_0 \geq 0$  if  $F(x) = \int_0^x \frac{ds}{f(s)} < \infty$  and  $x > 0, x_0 > 0$  if  $F(x) = \int_0^x \frac{ds}{f(s)} = \infty$ . Then for each  $t \in [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$ , we have

$$(Fop)(t) \leq 2(Fop)(a) + 2 \int_a^t \frac{p^{\diamond\alpha}(s)}{f(p(\rho(s)))}.$$

**Proof.** Since  $f$  is positive and non-decreasing on  $(0, \infty)$ , we have

$$p(\rho(t)) \leq p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t)$$

$$f(p(\rho(t))) \leq f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))$$

and

$$\frac{1}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq \frac{1}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

If we integrate the last in equality from 0 to 1, we get

$$\int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)))} = \frac{1}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

Multiply both sides of the last inequality with  $p^\nabla(t)$ , since  $p^\nabla(t) \geq 0$  the inequality does not change.

$$p^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq \frac{p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

Again since  $f$  is positive and non-decreasing on  $(0, \infty)$ , we have

$$p(t) \leq p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t)$$

$$f(p(t)) \leq f(p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t))$$

and

$$\frac{1}{f(p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t))} \leq \frac{1}{f(p(t))}.$$

If we integrate the last in equality from 0 to 1, we get

$$\int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t))} \leq \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(t))} = \frac{1}{f(p(t))}.$$

Multiply both sides of the last inequality with  $p^\Delta(t)$ , since  $p^\Delta(t) \geq 0$  the inequality does not change.

$$p^\Delta(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t))} \leq \frac{p^\Delta(t)}{f(p(t))}.$$

Since  $\alpha \in (0, 1)$ , then

$$\alpha p^\Delta(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t))} \leq \alpha \frac{p^\Delta(t)}{f(p(t))}. \quad (5.7)$$

and

$$(1 - \alpha)p^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \leq (1 - \alpha) \frac{p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}. \quad (5.8)$$

If we sum the inequalities (5.7) and (5.8) we get

$$\begin{aligned} & \alpha p^\Delta(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(t) + h\mu(t)p^\Delta(t))} + (1 - \alpha)p^\nabla(t) \int_0^1 \frac{dh}{f(p(\rho(t)) + h\nu(t)p^\nabla(t))} \\ & \leq \alpha \frac{p^\Delta(t)}{f(p(t))} + (1 - \alpha) \frac{p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}. \end{aligned}$$

If we use the chain rule for nabla derivative and chain rule for delta derivative we get

$$\alpha(Fop)^\Delta(t) + (1 - \alpha)(Fop)^\nabla(t) \leq \alpha \frac{p^\Delta(t)}{f(p(t))} + (1 - \alpha) \frac{p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

Since  $p^\nabla(t), p^\Delta(t) \geq 0$ , then  $p$  is non-decreasing. Therefore  $p(\rho(t)) \leq p(t)$  and we can write above inequality as

$$\alpha(Fop)^\Delta(t) + (1 - \alpha)(Fop)^\nabla(t) \leq \frac{\alpha p^\Delta(t) + (1 - \alpha)p^\nabla(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

In other words,

$$(Fop)^{\diamond_\alpha}(t) \leq \frac{p^{\diamond_\alpha}(t)}{f(p(\rho(t)))}.$$

Now integrate both sides of the inequality from  $a$  to  $t$ .

$$\int_a^t (Fop)^{\diamond_\alpha}(s) \diamond_\alpha s \leq \int_a^t \frac{p^{\diamond_\alpha}(s)}{f(p(\rho(s)))} \diamond_\alpha s.$$

$$\int_a^t (Fop)^{\diamond_\alpha}(s) \diamond_\alpha s = \alpha^2 \int_a^t (Fop)^\Delta(s) \Delta s + (1 - \alpha)^2 \int_a^t (Fop)^\nabla(s) \nabla s$$

$$+ \alpha(1 - \alpha) \int_a^t (Fop)^\Delta(s) \nabla s + \alpha(1 - \alpha) \int_a^t (Fop)^\nabla(s) \Delta s.$$

Since our Times Scales are regulated then by [40] we can use the condition  $(Fop)^\nabla(s) = (Fop)^\Delta(\rho(s))$  and  $(Fop)^\Delta(s) = (Fop)^\nabla(\sigma(s))$ . We have

$$\int_a^t (Fop)^{\diamond_\alpha}(s) \diamond_\alpha s = \alpha^2 \int_a^t (Fop)^\Delta(s) \Delta s + (1 - \alpha)^2 \int_a^t (Fop)^\nabla(s) \nabla s$$

$$+ \alpha(1 - \alpha) \int_a^t (Fop)^\nabla(\sigma(s)) \nabla s + \alpha(1 - \alpha) \int_a^t (Fop)^\Delta(\rho(s)) \Delta s.$$

Since  $a$  is the initial point then  $\rho(a) = a = \sigma(a)$ . Therefore we get

$$(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)Fop(t) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)Fop(\rho(t)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)Fop(\sigma(t))$$

$$\leq Fop(a) + \int_a^t \frac{p^{\diamond_\alpha}(s)}{f(p(\rho(s)))} \diamond_\alpha s.$$

Since  $F$  and  $p$  are positive functions then we can write the last inequality as

$$(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)Fop(t) \leq Fop(a) + \int_a^t \frac{r^{\diamond_\alpha}(s)}{f(p(\rho(s)))} \diamond_\alpha s.$$

It is easily seen that  $1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2$  takes its minimum value at  $\alpha = \frac{1}{2}$  when  $\alpha \in (0, 1)$  and at that point  $1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2 = \frac{1}{2}$ .

Hence we get the desired result

$$\frac{1}{2}Fop(t) \leq Fop(a) + \int_a^t \frac{p^{\diamond_\alpha}(s)}{f(p(\rho(s)))} \diamond_\alpha s.$$

□

Using Lemma 5.5.1 above we get the following result.

**Theorem 5.5.1**  $u \in C_{rl}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}_+)$  satisfies for some  $k > 0$  such that

$$u^2(t) \leq k^2 + 2 \int_a^t \left[ f(s)u(s) \left\{ u(s) + \int_a^s g(\tau)w(u(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau \right\} + h(s)u(s) \right] \diamond_\alpha s$$

Here our Times Scale is regulated and  $\sigma(a) = a$ .  $\forall t \in [a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}$   $f, g, h \in C_{ri}([a, b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$ ,  $w(t) \in C(\mathbb{R}_+^0, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$  and  $w(t)$  is non-decreasing, then

$$\begin{aligned}
u(t) &\leq 4k + 2c \int_a^t (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \\
&+ 2 \int_a^t \left[ (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(s) + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\rho(s)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(s)) \right] \\
&\times \left[ E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right) \right. \right. \\
&+ \left. \int_a^s \left[ 4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2 \right] f(\sigma^2(\tau)) + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(\tau)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\tau) \right] \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \\
&+ \left. \left. \int_a^s [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(\tau))] \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s.
\end{aligned}$$

where  $E(r) = \int_1^r \frac{ds}{w(s)+s}$ ,  $r > 0$ . Here  $m, c \geq 1$ .

**Proof.** If we take  $a = t$ , then the inequality obviously holds true. Let  $t_0 \in (a, b]$  and define  $z(t)$  in  $[a, t_0]$  such that

$$z(t) = k^2 + 2 \int_a^t \left[ f(s)u(s) \left\{ u(s) + \int_a^s g(\tau)w(u(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(s)u(s) \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s.$$

Therefore for  $t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}$ ,  $u(t) \leq \sqrt{z(t)}$ . By using theorem from Sheng [46] we take the diamond alpha derivative of  $z(t)$  and we get

$$\begin{aligned}
z^{\diamond_{\alpha}}(t) &= 2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2) \left[ f(t)u(t) \left\{ u(t) + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(u(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(t)u(t) \right] \\
&+ 2(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t))u(\rho(t)) \left\{ u(\rho(t)) + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(u(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\rho(t))u(\rho(t)) \right] \\
&+ 2(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t))u(\sigma(t)) \left\{ u(\sigma(t)) + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(u(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\sigma(t))u(\sigma(t)) \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Since each of the functions constitute  $z^{\diamond_{\alpha}}(t)$  are non-negative, then  $z^{\diamond_{\alpha}}(t) \geq 0$ . If we take the delta and nabla derivative of  $z(t)$  we also see that  $z^{\Delta}(t), z^{\nabla}(t) \geq 0$ . Then  $z(t)$  is non decreasing, in other words  $z(\sigma(t)) \geq z(t) \geq z(\rho(t))$ . Since  $u(t) \leq \sqrt{z(t)}$  then we have

$$\begin{aligned}
z^{\diamond_{\alpha}}(t) &\leq 2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2) \left[ f(t)\sqrt{z(t)} \left\{ \sqrt{z(t)} + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(t)\sqrt{z(t)} \right] \\
&+ 2(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t))\sqrt{z(\rho(t))} \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho(t))} + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\rho(t))\sqrt{z(\rho(t))} \right] \\
&+ 2(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t))\sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\sigma(t))\sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Since  $z(\sigma(t)) \geq z(t) \geq z(\rho(t))$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned}
z^{\diamond_{\alpha}}(t) &\leq 2\sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} \left[ (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2) \left[ f(t) \left\{ \sqrt{z(t)} + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(t) \right] \right. \\
&+ (\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho(t))} + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\rho(t)) \right] \\
&+ \left. (\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\sigma(t)) \right] \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Then we get

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{z^{\diamond\alpha}(t)}{2\sqrt{z(\sigma(t))}} &\leq (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2) \left[ f(t) \left\{ \sqrt{z(t)} + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(t) \right] \\
&+ (\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho(t))} + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\rho(t)) \right] \\
&+ (\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\sigma(t)) \right].
\end{aligned} \tag{5.9}$$

Our functions are from  $C_{rl}([a,b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$ , then they are regulated on  $[a,b]_{\mathbb{T}}$ , then  $z(t)$  is bounded and  $z(t)$  never takes zero.

Therefore there exists  $c$  such that  $c = \max_{t \in [a,t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}} \frac{\sqrt{z(\sigma(t))}}{\sqrt{z(\rho(t))}}$ . If we multiply (5.9) by  $c$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{z^{\diamond\alpha}(t)}{2\sqrt{z(\rho(t))}} &\leq c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2) \left[ f(t) \left\{ \sqrt{z(t)} + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(t) \right] \\
&+ c(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho(t))} + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\rho(t)) \right] \\
&+ c(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} + h(\sigma(t)) \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Now we use the Lemma 5.5.1 and we get,

$$\begin{aligned}
\sqrt{z(t)} &\leq 2k + 2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2) \int_a^t \left[ f(s) \left\{ \sqrt{z(s)} + \int_a^s g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\
&+ 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2) \int_a^t \left[ f(\rho(s)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho(s))} + \int_a^{\rho(s)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\
&+ 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2) \int_a^t \left[ f(\sigma(s)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma(s))} + \int_a^{\sigma(s)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\
&+ \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(s) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(s)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(s)) \diamond_{\alpha} s.
\end{aligned}$$

Let us say the right hand side of the above inequality  $V(t)$ , then  $\sqrt{z(t)} \leq V(t)$ . If we take the diamond alpha derivative of  $V(t)$  then we get

$$\begin{aligned}
V^{\diamond\alpha}(t) &= (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2) \left[ f(t) \left\{ \sqrt{z(t)} + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho(t))} + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma(t))} + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2 \left[ f(\rho^2(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\rho^2(t))} + \int_a^{\rho^2(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2 \left[ f(\sigma^2(t)) \left\{ \sqrt{z(\sigma^2(t))} + \int_a^{\sigma^2(t)} g(\tau)w(\sqrt{z(\tau)}) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Since  $\sqrt{z(t)} \leq V(t)$ , then we get

$$\begin{aligned}
V^{\diamond\alpha}(t) &\leq (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2) \left[ f(t) \left\{ V(t) + \int_a^t g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\rho(t)) \left\{ V(\rho(t)) + \int_a^{\rho(t)} g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2) \left[ f(\sigma(t)) \left\{ V(\sigma(t)) + \int_a^{\sigma(t)} g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2 \left[ f(\rho^2(t)) \left\{ V(\rho^2(t)) + \int_a^{\rho^2(t)} g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \\
&+ 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2 \left[ f(\sigma^2(t)) \left\{ V(\sigma^2(t)) + \int_a^{\sigma^2(t)} g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right].
\end{aligned}$$

Since each of the functions that constitute  $V^{\diamond\alpha}(t)$  are non-negative then  $V^{\diamond\alpha}(t) \geq 0$ . Similarly if we take the delta and nabla derivative of  $V(t)$  we also see that  $V^{\Delta}(t)$ ,

$V^\nabla(t) \geq 0$ . Therefore  $V(\sigma^2(t)) \geq V(\sigma(t)) \geq V(t) \geq V(\rho(t)) \geq V(\rho^2(t))$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} V^{\diamond\alpha}(t) &\leq \left[ (2c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2)f(t) + 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\rho(t)) \right. \\ &\quad + \left. 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(t)) \right] \\ &\quad \times \left\{ V(\sigma^2(t)) + \int_a^{\sigma^2(t)} g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

Let us take  $V(\sigma^2(t)) + \int_a^{\sigma^2(t)} g(\tau)w(V(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau = \Omega(t)$

$$\begin{aligned} \Omega^{\diamond\alpha}(t) &= V^{\diamond\alpha}(\sigma^2(t)) + (1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)g(\sigma^2(t))w(V(\sigma^2(t))) + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma(t))w(V(\sigma(t))) \\ &\quad + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma^3(t))w(V(\sigma^3(t))). \end{aligned}$$

Therefore we get

$$\begin{aligned} \Omega^{\diamond\alpha}(t) &\leq \left[ (2c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(t)) + 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma(t)) \right. \\ &\quad + \left. 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(t) \right] \Omega(t) \\ &\quad + (1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)g(\sigma^2(t))w(V(\sigma^2(t))) + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma(t))w(V(\sigma(t))) \\ &\quad + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma^3(t))w(V(\sigma^3(t))). \end{aligned}$$

Since functions in  $\Omega^{\diamond\alpha}(t)$  non-negative then  $\Omega^{\diamond\alpha}(t) \geq 0$ .

Similarly  $\Omega^\Delta(t), \Omega^\nabla(t) \geq 0$ . It is obvious that  $V(\sigma^2(t)) \leq \Omega(t)$  and since  $w$  is non-decreasing we also have  $w(\Omega(\sigma(t))) \geq w(\Omega(t)) \geq w(\Omega(\rho(t)))$ .

Therefore  $w(\Omega(\sigma(t))) \geq w(V(\sigma^3(t)))$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} \Omega^{\diamond\alpha}(t) &\leq \left[ (2c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(t)) + 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma(t)) \right. \\ &\quad + \left. 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(t) \right] \Omega(t) \\ &\quad + [(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)g(\sigma^2(t)) + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma(t)) + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma^3(t))] w(\Omega(\sigma(t))). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\Omega^{\diamond\alpha}(t)}{\Omega(t)+w(\Omega(\sigma(t)))} &\leq \left[ (2c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(t)) + 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma(t)) \right. \\ &\quad + \left. 4c(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)(\alpha-\alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(t)) + 2c(\alpha-\alpha^2)^2f(t) \right] \\ &\quad + [(1-2\alpha+2\alpha^2)g(\sigma^2(t)) + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma(t)) + (\alpha-\alpha^2)g(\sigma^3(t))]. \end{aligned} \tag{5.10}$$

Since each of the functions in  $\Omega(t)$  are from  $C_{rl}([a,b]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}_+^0)$ , then  $\Omega(t)$  is bounded on  $[a,b]_{\mathbb{T}}$  and never takes zero.

Therefore there exists  $m$  such that  $m = \max_{t \in [a, t_0]_{\mathbb{T}}} \frac{\Omega(t) + w(\Omega(\sigma(t)))}{\Omega(\rho(t)) + w(\Omega(\rho(t)))}$ . If we multiply (5.10) by  $m$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\Omega^{\circ\alpha}(t)}{\Omega(\rho(t)) + w(\Omega(\rho(t)))} &\leq \left[ (2mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f((\sigma^2(t))) \right. \\ &\quad + 4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f((\sigma(t))) \\ &\quad + 4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f((\sigma^3(t))) + 2mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(t)) + 2mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(t) \left. \right] \\ &\quad + [(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(t)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(t)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(t))]. \end{aligned}$$

Again we use Lemma 5.5.1 and get

$$\begin{aligned} E(\Omega(t)) &\leq 2E(\Omega(a)) + \int_a^t \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f((\sigma^2(s))) \right. \\ &\quad + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f((\sigma^3(s))) \\ &\quad + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(s)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(s) \left. \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\ &\quad + \int_a^t [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(s))] \diamond_{\alpha} s. \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} E(\Omega(t)) &\leq 2E(2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(s) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(s)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(s)) \diamond_{\alpha} s) \\ &\quad + \int_a^t \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f((\sigma^2(s))) \right. \\ &\quad + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f((\sigma^3(s))) \\ &\quad + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(s)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(s) \left. \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\ &\quad + \int_a^t [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(s))] \diamond_{\alpha} s. \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} \Omega(t) &\leq E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(s) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(s)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(s)) \diamond_{\alpha} s \right) \right. \\ &\quad + \int_a^t \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(s)) \right. \\ &\quad + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(s)) \\ &\quad + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(s)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(s) \left. \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\ &\quad \left. + \int_a^t [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(s))] \diamond_{\alpha} s \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} V^{\circ\alpha}(t) &\leq \left[ (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(t) + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\rho(t)) \right. \\ &\quad + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(t)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(t)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(t)) \left. \right] \\ &\quad \times E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(s) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(s)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(s)) \diamond_{\alpha} s \right) \right. \\ &\quad + \int_a^t \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(s)) \right. \\ &\quad + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(s)) \\ &\quad + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(s)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(s) \left. \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s \\ &\quad \left. + \int_a^t [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(s)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(s))] \diamond_{\alpha} s \right\}. \end{aligned} \tag{5.11}$$

If we integrate  $V^{\diamond\alpha}(t)$  from  $a$  to  $t$ , we have

$$\int_a^t V^{\diamond\alpha}(s) \diamond_{\alpha} s = (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)V(t) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)V(\rho(t)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)V(\sigma(t)) - V(a).$$

If we integrate (5.11) from  $a$  to  $t$ , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)V(t) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)V(\rho(t)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)V(\sigma(t)) \leq \\ & V(a) + \int_a^t \left[ (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(s) + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\rho(s)) \right. \\ & \left. + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(s)) \right] \\ & \times \left[ E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right) \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + \int_a^s \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(\tau)) \right. \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(\tau)) \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\tau) \right] \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right. \\ & \left. \left. + \int_a^s \left[ 2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(\tau)) \right] \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s. \end{aligned}$$

Since  $V(\rho(t)), V(\sigma(t)) \geq 0$  and  $\alpha \in (0, 1)$  we can omit them and get

$$\begin{aligned} & (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)V(t) \leq V(a) + \int_a^t \left[ (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(s) \right. \\ & \left. + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\rho(s)) \right. \\ & \left. + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(s)) \right] \\ & \times \left[ E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right) \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + \int_a^s \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(\tau)) \right. \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(\tau)) \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. + 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\tau) \right] \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right. \\ & \left. \left. + \int_a^s \left[ 2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(\tau)) \right] \diamond_{\alpha} \tau \right\} \right] \diamond_{\alpha} s. \end{aligned}$$

Since  $1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2$  can minimum be  $\frac{1}{2}$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{2}V(t) &\leq 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau \\
&+ \int_a^t \left[ (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(s) + 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\rho(s)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(s)) \right] \\
&\times \left[ E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau \right) \right. \right. \\
&+ \int_a^s \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(\tau)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(\tau)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\tau) \right] \diamond_\alpha \tau \\
&+ \left. \left. \int_a^s [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(\tau))] \diamond_\alpha \tau \right] \diamond_\alpha s. \right.
\end{aligned}$$

Since  $u(t) \leq \sqrt{z(t)} \leq V(t)$  we get

$$\begin{aligned}
u(t) &\leq 4k + 2c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau \\
&+ 2 \int_a^t \left[ (2c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 4c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(s) \right. \\
&+ \left. 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\rho(s)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 4c(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^2(s)) + 2c(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\rho^2(s)) \right] \\
&\times \left[ E^{-1} \left\{ 2E \left( 2k + c \int_a^{t_0} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)h(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\rho(\tau)) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)h(\sigma(\tau)) \diamond_\alpha \tau \right) \right. \right. \\
&+ \int_a^s \left[ (4mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)^2 + 8mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2)f(\sigma^2(\tau)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma(\tau)) \right. \\
&+ \left. 8mc(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)(\alpha - \alpha^2)f(\sigma^3(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\sigma^4(\tau)) + 4mc(\alpha - \alpha^2)^2f(\tau) \right] \diamond_\alpha \tau \\
&+ \left. \left. \int_a^s [2(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)m g(\sigma^2(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma(\tau)) + 2(\alpha - \alpha^2)m g(\sigma^3(\tau))] \diamond_\alpha \tau \right] \diamond_\alpha s. \right.
\end{aligned}$$

Since we choose  $t_0$  arbitrary then we can take  $t = t_0$ . Hence we get the desired result. □

**Example 5.5.1** If we choose  $\alpha = 1$ ,  $\mathbb{T} = \mathbb{R}$ ,  $m = c = 1/2$ , then Theorem 5.5.1 becomes Theorem 5.2.1.

**Example 5.5.2** Let  $\mathbb{T} = \{0\} \cup \{\frac{1}{n+1} : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \cup \mathbb{N}$ . Here we assume that  $\mathbb{N}$  starts with 1. It is obvious that our time scales is regulated and  $0 = \sigma(0)$ . Let us choose  $M \in \mathbb{N}$  and investigate the below equality on the time scales  $[0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}$ .

$$u^2(t) = k^2 + 2 \int_0^t h(s)u(s) \diamond_\alpha s$$

$h(t) = 0$  if  $t \in \{0\} \cup \{\frac{1}{n+1} : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$  and  $h(t) = P(t)$  if  $t \in \mathbb{N}$ . Therefore  $u(t) = k$  if  $t \in \{0\} \cup \{\frac{1}{n+1} : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ ,  $u^2(1) = k^2 + (1 - \alpha)P(1)u(1)$ , .....

$$u^2(n) = k^2 + P(1)u(1) + P(2)u(2) + \dots + P(n-1)u(n-1) + (1-\alpha)P(n)u(n), \dots, \dots,$$

$$u^2(M) = k^2 + P(1)u(1) + P(2)u(2) + \dots + P(M-1)u(M-1) + (1-\alpha)P(M)u(M)$$

If we apply Theorem 5.5.1 we get the bound for  $u(t)$  such that

$$u(t) \leq 4k + 2c\alpha \sum_{\tau=1}^{t-1} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)P(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(\tau - 1) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(\tau + 1) \\ + 2c(1 - \alpha) \sum_{\tau=1}^t (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)P(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(\tau - 1) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(\tau + 1)$$

$$u(t) \leq 4k + 2c \sum_{\tau=1}^{t-1} (1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)P(\tau) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(\tau - 1) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(\tau + 1) \\ + 2c(1 - \alpha) [(1 - 2\alpha + 2\alpha^2)P(t) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(t - 1) + (\alpha - \alpha^2)P(t + 1)]$$

where

$$c = \max_{n \in [1, M]} \left\{ \sqrt{1 + \frac{2(1-\alpha)P(1)u(1)}{k^2}}, \sqrt{1 + \frac{2P(1)u(1) + 2(1-\alpha)P(2)u(2)}{k^2}}, \dots, \right. \\ \left. \sqrt{1 + \frac{2P(n-1)u(n-1) + 2(1-\alpha)P(n)u(n)}{k^2 + 2P(1)u(1) + 2P(2)u(2) + \dots + 2P(n-2)u(n-2)}}, \dots, \right. \\ \left. \sqrt{1 + \frac{2P(M-1)u(M-1) + 2(1-\alpha)P(M)u(M)}{k^2 + 2P(1)u(1) + \dots + 2P(M-2)u(M-2)}} \right\}.$$

If we take  $\alpha = \frac{1}{2}$ ,  $k^2 = 2$ , then for the equation  $u^2(t) = 2 + 2 \int_0^t h(s)u(s) \diamond_{\alpha} s$ , where  $h(s) = 0$ , if  $t \in \{0\} \cup \{\frac{1}{n+1} : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$  and  $h(s) = 1$  if  $t \in \mathbb{N}$ , then  $c = \frac{3}{2}$  and  $u(t)$  is bound with  $u(t) \leq \sqrt{2}$  if  $t \in \{0\} \cup \{\frac{1}{n+1} : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$  and  $u(n) \leq 4\sqrt{2} + 3n - \frac{3}{2}$ , if  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ .

## 5.6 An Application on Water Percolation Equation on Nabla Time Scales Calculus

Consider the equality

$$(x(t))^{\nabla} = F \left( t, x(t), \int_0^t \hat{L}[t, s, x(s)] \nabla s \right)$$

such that  $F : C_{id}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow C_{id}([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$ .

$$\text{Let } x(0) = \sqrt{L}, F(t, x, y) = y + \begin{cases} H(\nu(t)) \frac{\sqrt{x(t)}}{2}, & \text{if } x \geq 0 \\ 0, & \text{if } x < 0 \end{cases},$$

$$\hat{L}(t, s, x) = \begin{cases} H^\nabla(t-s) \frac{\sqrt{x(s)}}{2}, & \text{if } x \geq 0 \\ 0, & \text{if } x < 0 \end{cases}$$

If we denote  $\sqrt{x(t)} = u(t)$ , then we obtain

$$(x(t))^\nabla = H(\nu(t)) \frac{\sqrt{x(t)}}{2} + \int_0^t H^\nabla(t-s) \frac{\sqrt{x(s)}}{2},$$

$$(u^2(t))^\nabla = \left( \int_0^t H(t-s) \frac{u(s)}{2} \nabla s \right)^\nabla$$

If we take the nabla integral of the last equality we have,

$$u^2(t) = L + \int_0^t H(t-s) \frac{u(s)}{2} \nabla s.$$

Then by Theorem 5.4.1

$$u(t) \leq \sqrt{L} + \alpha \frac{\int_0^t H(t-s)}{4} \nabla s,$$

where  $\alpha$  is the constant in the Theorem 5.4.1.

The norm on  $C_{ld}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$  is defined as for  $u(t) \in C_{ld}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$ ,

$$\|u(t)\|_1 = \max_{[0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}} \|u(t)\| + \max_{[0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}} \|u^\nabla(t)\|.$$

Define the linear operator  $L : C_{ld}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow C_{ld}([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$  such that

$Lu(t) = u^\nabla(t)$ . By Theorem 1.65 in [8]  $L$  has a bounded inverse  $L^{-1}$ .

Let  $F_\lambda : C_{ld}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow C_{ld}([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R})$  and  $1 \geq \lambda \geq 0$  such that

$$F_\lambda(x(t)) = \lambda F(t, x(t), \int_0^t \hat{L}[t, s, x(s)] \nabla s.$$

and

$$H(x, \lambda) = L^{-1} F_\lambda u, \quad u \in C_{ld}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}, \mathbb{R}), \quad \lambda \in [0, 1]$$

This homotopy is compact and is also fixed point free on the boudary of  $O$  such that

$$O = \left\{ x \in C_{ld}^1([0, M]_{\mathbb{T}}) : \|x\|_1 \leq 1 + \tilde{M} + \sup_{t \in [0, M]_{\mathbb{T}} \text{ and } |x| \leq \tilde{M}} \left\| \left( F(t, x(t), \int_0^t \hat{L}[t, s, x(s)] \nabla s) \right) \right\| \right\},$$

where  $\tilde{M} = \sqrt{L} + \alpha \frac{\int_0^t H(t-s)}{4} \nabla s$ . Since  $H(\cdot, 0)$  is the zero map it is essential so  $H(\cdot, 1)$  is also essential. Then by topological transversality theorem in [14]  $H(\cdot, 1)$  has a fixed point which is the solution of the above system.

Investigating uniqueness of the solution we will use Gronwall inequality for nabla differentiation. First, let  $u(t)$ ,  $v(t)$  be the solutions of the given equation, and let  $z(t) = |u(t) - v(t)|$  and  $z(0) = 0$ , then

$$z^2(t) = \int_0^t H(t-s) \frac{z(s)}{2} \nabla s.$$

Since by Theorem 5.4.1  $u(t), v(t) \leq \sqrt{L}$ .

By Theorem 1.65 in [8]  $\max_{t \in [0, M]} H(t) \leq \beta$ . Hence we get

$$2\sqrt{L}z(t) \leq \beta \int_0^t \frac{z(s)}{2} \nabla s.$$

If we take nabla derivative both sides of the inequality we get,

$$z^\nabla(t) \leq \frac{\beta}{4\sqrt{L}}z(t).$$

Then by [34] Gronwall inequality for nabla differentiation  $z(t) \leq 0$ , hence there is unique solution.

## CHAPTER 6

### CONCLUSION

This thesis is devoted to applications of generalized integral inequalities to specific areas of biological mathematics and physics. The important notion in this thesis is time scales calculus. Especially in population sciences such organisms like insects does not have a continuous life cycle. For instance, they live a season, but the following season because of the weather conditions they could not live. In such a case, time scales calculus becomes a useful tool. Because such a situation can be expressed mathematically by this notion. Therefore in chapter 2, chapter 3 and chapter 4, we have studied some properties of predator-prey dynamical systems on a general time scales and our findings are important for the organisms whose life cycle is unusual. The conditions which are expressed by the generalized integral inequalities in Lemma 2.3.2, Lemma 2.3.3, Theorem 2.4.1 and Theorem 4.2.1 are important to determine the permanence, global attractivity and periodicity of the solutions of the given system. Also in our thesis we have studied the impulsive case of the given predator-prey dynamic system and we have shown how important the impulses are. Lemma 3.1.1 shows apparently the effect of the impulses on prey and predator that can cause extinction or rescue the species from the extinction. In addition to these, because of the impacts of the impulses on the inequalities in Theorem 3.2.1, Theorem 3.2.2, Theorem 3.2.3 and Lemma 3.2.6, impulses have also an important effect on the periodicity, permanence and global attractivity of the solutions. Additionally, if the results that we have found in the third chapter which are related with the globally attractive periodic solutions of the given system for the continuous case can be generalized to any time scales, this will also be an important study.

And in the fifth chapter we have deal with a special inequality, Constantin's Inequality. We have generalized this inequality to the nabla and diamond-alpha calculus. Although we does not have chance to study about the numeric explanation of the diamond alpha Constantin's Inequality, diamond alpha generalization of this inequality is very beneficial to get more accurate results for the numeric solutions of the water percolation equation or such kind of integro-differential equations that are convenient to the application of Constantin's inequality. Also in [46] it was shown that solving an integral numerically by using diamond-alpha notion, we can be able to get a more accurate result. Therefore by using the diamond-alpha forms of the equations more accurate numeric results can be obtained and because of this reason our generalizations become significant.

## REFERENCES

- [1] Adivar M, *New Periodicity Concept For Time Scales*, Math. Slovaca, 63(2013), No. 4, 817-828.
- [2] Agarwal R., Martin B., and Allan P. *Inequalities on time scales: a survey*, Mathematical Inequalities and Applications 4 (2001): 535-558.
- [3] Anderson D.R., *Taylor polynomials for nabla dynamic equations on time scales*, Panamer. Math. J. 12 (2002), no. 4, 17–27.
- [4] Atici F. M, Biles C.D, Lebedinsky A, *An Application of Times Scales to Economics* Math. Comput. Modelling 43(2006) 718-726, 2005.
- [5] D. Bainov and P. Simeonov, *Impulsive Differential Equations: Periodic Solutions and Applications*, Pitman Monographs and Surveys in Pure and Applied Mathematics, Longman Scientific and Technical, Harlow, UK, vol. 66,1993.
- [6] J. R. Beddington *Mutual interference between parasites or predators and its effect on searching efficiency* Journal of Animal Ecology, vol. 44, pp. 331–340, 1975.
- [7] S. R. Bernfeld, *The extendability of solutions of perturbed scalar differential equations*, Pacific J. Math. 42 (1972), 277-288.
- [8] Bohner M, Peterson A, *Dynamic Equations on Times Scales: an introduction with applications*, Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel, Boston, Berlin, 2001.
- [9] Bohner M. and Peterson A, *Advances in dynamic equations on time scales* Birkhäuser Boston, Boston, MA, 2003.
- [10] Martin Bohner, Meng Fan, Jimin Zhang. *Existence of periodic solutions in predator-prey and competition dynamic systems*. Nonlinear Analysis: RealWorld Applications 7 (2006) 1193 – 1204.
- [11] N. Bourbaki, *Elements of mathematics. Algebra: Algebraic structures. Linear algebra* , 1 , Addison-Wesley (1974) pp. Chapt.1;2
- [12] L. Bourdin, E. Trelat *General Cauchy –Lipschitz theory for D-Cauchy problems with Caratheodory dynamics on time scales* Journal of Difference Equations and Applications, 2014 Vol. 20, No. 4, 526–547.

- [13] F. Chen *Permanence and global stability of nonautonomous Lotka–Volterra system with predator-prey and deviating arguments* Appl. Math. Comput. 173 (2006) 1082–1100.
- [14] Constantin A., *Topological Transversality: Application to an Integrodifferential Equation* J. Math. Anal. Appl. Article no. 0057, 197, 855-863, 1996.
- [15] A. Constantin, *Global existence of solutions for perturbed differential equations*, Ann. Mat. Pura Appl. (4) 168 (1995), 237-299.
- [16] A. Constantin, *Solutions globales d'equations differentielles perturbees*, C. R. Acad., Sci. Paris, 320 (1995), 1319-1322.
- [17] da Cruz, Artur MC Brito, Natália Martins, and Delfim FM Torres. *The Diamond Integral on Time Scales*, Bull. Malays. Math. Sci. Soc., in press (2013).
- [18] D. L. DeAngelis, R. A. Goldstein, and R. V. O'Neill, *A model for trophic interaction*, Ecology, vol.56, pp. 881–892, 1975.
- [19] Erbe, Lynn H., and Haiyan Wang. *On the existence of positive solutions of ordinary differential equations*. Proceedings of the American Mathematical Society 120.3 (1994): 743-748.
- [20] M. Fan, S. Agarwal, *Periodic solutions for a class of discrete time competition systems*, Nonlinear Stud. 9 (3) (2002) 249–261.
- [21] M. Fan, Y. Kuang, *Dynamics of a nonautonomous predator–prey system with the Beddington–DeAngelis functional response* J. Math. Anal. Appl. 295 (2004) 15–39.
- [22] M. Fan, K. Wang, *Global periodic solutions of a generalized n-species Gilpin–Ayala competition model*, Comput. Math. Appl. 40 (10–11) (2000) 1141–1151.
- [23] M. Fan, K. Wang, *Periodicity in a delayed ratio-dependent predator–prey system*, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 262 (1) (2001) 179–190.
- [24] M. Fan, Q. Wang, *Periodic solutions of a class of nonautonomous discrete time semi-ratio-dependent predator–prey systems*, Discrete Contin. Dynam. Syst. Ser. B 4 (3) (2004) 563–574.
- [25] Q. Fang, X. L., M. Cao *Dynamics of a Discrete Predator-Prey System with Beddington-DeAngelis Function Response*, Appl Math., 2012, 3, 389-394.
- [26] M. Fazly, M. Hesaaraki *Periodic solutions for predator–prey systems with Beddington–DeAngelis functional response on time scales* Nonlinear Anal-Real 9 (2008) 1224 – 1235.

- [27] Ferreira R. A.C, *Constantin Integral Inequalities on Time Scales*, Arch. Math., 93(2009)153-163, Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel, Boston, Berlin, 2009.
- [28] Ferreira R. A.C, Torres D. F.M, *Generalizations of Gronwall Bihari inequalities on time scales*, J. Difference Equ. Appl., 15:6, 529-539, 2009.
- [29] K. Gopalsamy, *Global Asymptotic Stability in a Periodic Lotka Volterra System*, Austral. Math. Soc. Ser. B 27 (1985), 66-72.
- [30] Hara T, Yoneyama T. and Sugie J, *Continuability of solutions of perturbed differential equations*, Nonlinear Anal. 8 (1984), no. 8, 963-975.
- [31] S. Hilger, *Analysis on measure chains—a unified approach to continuous and discrete calculus*, Results Math. 18 (1990) 18–56.
- [32] R. Hilscher and V. Zeidan, *Calculus of variations on time scales: weak local piecewise  $C_{rd}^1$  solutions with variable endpoints*, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 289 (2004), no.1, 143–166.
- [33] H.F. Huo, *Periodic solutions for a semi-ratio-dependent predator–prey system with functional responses*, Appl. Math. Lett. 18 (2005) 313–320.
- [34] B.J. Jackson, *Adaptive control in the nabla setting* Neural Parallel Sci. Comput. 16 (2008), 253-272.
- [35] V. Lakshmikantham, S.Sivasundaram and B. Kaymakcalan, *Dynamic Systems on Measure Chains*, Kluwer Academic Publishers, Dordrecht, 1996.
- [36] V. Lakshmikantham, D. D. Bařnov, and P. S. Simeonov, *Theory of Impulsive Differential Equations*, vol. 6 of Series in Modern Applied Mathematics, World Scientific, Teaneck, NJ, USA, 1989.
- [37] Y.K. Li, *Periodic solutions of a periodic delay predator–prey system*, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. 127 (5) (1999) 1331–1335.
- [38] Liu X., Liu X., *Necessary and Sufficient Conditions for the Existence of Periodic Solutions in a Predator-Prey Model on Time Scales*, Electronic Journal of Differential Equations, Vol. 2012 (2012), No. 199, pp. 1–13. ISSN: 1072-6691.
- [39] Malinowska, Agnieszka B., and Delfim FM Torres. *The diamond-alpha Riemann integral and mean value theorems on time scales*. arXiv preprint arXiv:0804.4420 (2008).
- [40] Merdivenci Atici F., Guseinov G, *On Green’s functions and positive solutions for boundary value problems on time scales* J. Comput. Appl. Math. Volume 141 Issue 1-2, April 2002, 75 - 99 pp.
- [41] D. Mozyrska and D. F. M. Torres, *A Study of Diamond-Alpha Dynamic Equations on Regular Time Scales* Afr. Diaspora J. Math., Volume 8, Number 1 (2009), 35 - 47 pp.

- [42] Ou-Iang L, *The boundedness of solutions of linear differential equations  $y'' + A(t)y = 0$* , Shuxue Jinzhan, 3 (1957), 409–418.
- [43] Pachpatte B.G, *Some new inequalities related to certain inequalities in the theory of differential equations*, J. Math. Anal. Appl., 189(1) (1995), 128–144.
- [44] Saker, S. H., and Sheba Agarwal. *Oscillation and global attractivity in a periodic Nicholson's blowflies model*. Mathematical and computer modelling 35.7 (2002): 719-731.
- [45] A. M. Samoilenko and N. A. Perestyuk, *Impulsive Differential Equations*, World Scientific Series on Nonlinear Science. Series A: Monographs and Treatises, World Scientific, River Edge, NJ, USA, vol. 14, 1995.
- [46] Sheng Q., Fadag M., Hederson J., Davis J.M, *An exploration of combined dynamic derivatives on time scales and their applications* Nonlinear Anal. Real World Appl. 7 (2006) 395 – 413.
- [47] S. Tang, Y. Xiao, L. Chen, and R. A. Cheke, *Integrated pest management models and their dynamical behaviour*, Bulletin of Mathematical Biology, vol. 67, no. 1, pp. 115–135, 2005.
- [48] P. Wang. *Boundary Value Problems for First Order Impulsive Difference Equations*. International Journal of Difference Equations. Volume 1 Number 2 (2006), pp. 249–259.
- [49] Q. Wang, M. Fan, K. Wang, *Dynamics of a class of nonautonomous semi-ratio-dependent predator–prey systems with functional responses*, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 278 (2) (2003) 443–471.
- [50] W. Wang, J. Shen, J. Nieto *Permanence and Periodic Solution of Predator-Prey System with Holling Type Functional Response and Impulses* Discrete Dynamics in Nature and Society Volume 2007, Article ID 81756, 15 pages.
- [51] C. Wei, L. Chen *Periodic Solution of Prey-Predator Model with Beddington-DeAngelis Functional Response and Impulsive State Feedback Control* Journal of Applied Mathematics Volume 2012, 2012, 17 pages.
- [52] Z. Xiang, Y. Li, and X. Song, *Dynamic analysis of a pest management SEI model with saturation incidence concerning impulsive control strategy*, Nonlinear Analysis, vol. 10, no. 4, pp. 2335–2345, 2009.
- [53] R. Xu, M.A.J. Chaplain, F.A. Davidson, *Periodic solutions for a predator–prey model with Holling-type functional response and time delays*, Appl. Math. Comput. 161 (2) (2005) 637–654.
- [54] Yang E.H, Tan M.C, *A Generalization Of Constantin's Integral Inequality and Its Discrete Analogue*, J. Inequal. Pure Appl. Math, Volume 8 (2007), Issue 2, Article 57, 9 pp.

# CURRICULUM VITAE

## PERSONAL INFORMATION

**Surname, Name:** PELEN, Neslihan Nesliye

**Nationality:** Turkish (TC)

**Date and Place of Birth:** 07.12.1987, Kula, Manisa

**Marital Status:** Married

**Phone:** 03122102994

**Fax:** 03122102970

## EDUCATION

<b>Degree</b>	<b>Institution</b>	<b>Year of Graduation</b>
M.S.	Koç University	2011
B.S.	Boğaziçi University	2009
High School	Manisa Anadolu Öğretmen Lisesi	2004

## FOREIGN LANGUAGES

English (Advanced), French (Elementary)

## RESEARCH INTEREST

- Ordinary Differential Equations
- Impulsive Differential Equations
- Delay Differential Equations

- Difference Equations and Calculus on Time Scales
- Biological Mathematics

## **SCHOLARSHIPS**

Ph.d. Scholarship Program, TUBITAK, 2011-2014

## **INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE PRESENTATIONS**

- 1) International Congress in Honour of Professor Ravi P. Agarval, Uludağ University, Bursa, Türkiye, June 23, 2014
- 2) International Conference on Non-Linear Differential and Difference Equations: Recent Developments and Applications, Side, Antalya, Türkiye, 27 May, 2014
- 3) Progress on Difference Equations, İzmir Ekonomi University, İzmir, Türkiye, 21 May, 2014

## **NATIONAL CONFERENCE PRESENTATIONS**

- 1) I. Kadın Matematikçiler Derneği Çalıştayı, Gebze Yüksek Teknoloji Enstitüsü, Gebze, İzmit, Türkiye, 2 May, 2014.

## **CONFERENCE PARTICIPATION**

- 1) International Conference Anatolian Communications in Nonlinear Analysis, Abant İzzet Baysal University, Bolu, Türkiye, 3 July, 2013.
- 2) 8. Ankara Matematik Günleri, Çankaya Üniversitesi, Ankara, Türkiye, 13 June, 2013.

## **PUBLICATIONS IN PROGRESS**

- 1) F. Güvenilir, B. Kaymakçalan, N. N. Pelen Constantin's Inequality for Nabla and Diamond-Alpha Derivatives. (Submitted to Journal of Inequalities and Applications)
- 2) F. Güvenilir, B. Kaymakçalan, N. N. Pelen Periodic Solutions of Predator-Prey Dynamic Systems with Beddington Deangelis Functional Response and Impulses. (Submitted to Advances in Difference Equations)

## **PROFESSIONAL EXPERIENCE**

<b>Year</b>	<b>Place</b>	<b>Enrollment</b>
2009-2011	Koç University, Math Department	Teaching Assistant
2011-2014	METU, Math Department	Teaching Assistant and Researcher